



For daily latest books please visit
<https://novelsguru.com/>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

A BROKEN SOUL

Written by Precious Moloi

Introduction:

My name is Bennice Sibiyi but i go by Nissi. I am 21 years old. I have an older sister by the name of Fanny and she is 30 years old. I live at witbank, at Duva-park to be more exact. Duva-park is not a fancy place it's an informal settlement and we a small community probably +-50 houses in the whole area. We have no electricity, no toilets, no running water, no clinics or hospitals, and one primary and secondary schools that are very far from us. Our houses are made of wood and sand with a grass roof top. I live with my mother who has TB and ontop she is Hiv+ given by my father. My father passed on when i was 15 years of age, he didn't die by HIV No sir! he was killed by my sister, pretty intense isn't it?. He worked in Gauteng and i bet he messed around with alot of women there and brought my mom HIV. The reason why my sister killed him is that he was very abusive to my mother and to us, he tried raping my sister but my sister stabbed him to death,he couldn't fight back because he was drunk and my sister never got arrested because it was ruled as self defence. I finished matric when i was 19 and i passed but i couldn't further my studies because i didn't have money we very poor my mom is not working we depend on her social grant and if i go to college whose gonna look after my mom. My sister lives at jhb and she is a prostitute my mom doesn't support that at all that's why she never accept the money or things that my sister buys us. I am a very quiet girl and I'm very shy, i only have one Friend and no boyfriend. When it comes to physical features i am a yellow bone, average height, I'm not fat and I'm not skinny i just have a normal body with big boobs though something that runs in the family. I have short hair because I don't have money to braid those expensive weaves so cutting is less expensive. I am that kind of a girl who has goals and ambitions i never wanna depend on a man i wanna have my own money and depend on me that's why I'm not easily taken by this boys with flashy cars and loaded wallets. Boys in my hood are even scared of me because kimi alifakwa libuya no daka (i am full of shit),they say I'm not easily approachable and i always look angry vele angifuni ukuthi bangijwayele (i don't want them to get used to me). I have big dreams i wanna be a chef and own a restaurant one day and no guy is gonna take that dream away from me by getting me pregnant or using me No! I won't have that.

PART 1- A BROKEN SOUL

I always wake up in the morning at 4am to go fetch water at a nearby dam which we call it "Bhalulu dam". The dam has claimed alot of lives and from what I've heard is that there's a big snake living there but i believe none of that you know how people like to exaggerate. I woke up that morning at 6am i was 2 hours late, but that's because I hardly slept my mom was coughing all night and i was very worried about her. I love my mom alot she's been my pillar of strength especially back in my baby days i was diagnosed with pneumonia and my mom would take me to the clinic in a cold morning she would walk for 2 hours with me on her back and never complained. That was back when we still had a clinic now it's closed so we have a mobile clinic That comes once a month so you have to make sure that you don't get sick in the middle of the month. I got off from my sponge and changed my Pjs i put on my Jean that I've had for 3years now so ya you can imagine how it looks like. I put on my bra which i had to connect it together with safety pins because it was old to prevent it from falling and it was ripped. I put on my top and my flip flops. I took my bucket and went to the dam. It was a cold morning was around August mara you'd swear it was June. I walked on that grass which had mist busy rubbing my hands together trying to warm them up. The walk is 30min to the dam. I got there and knelt down then started pouring water into my bucket. The water was contaminated because people do their laundry there and the mines dispose their harmful chemicals through the dam, so when i get home i always make sure that i boil the water first and put a bit of bleach. When my bucket filled up i put it on my head and walked home damn my toes were freezing. I reached home and found my mom coughing, i quickly put the bucket down and ran to her. I touched her and she became Livid

Her: Hai maan Nissi i told you never to touch me, what will i do if you get TB
My mom always tried her level best to protect me.

Me: I'm just worried about you even last night you didn't sleep you were coughing.

Her: i just need my meds and I'll be fine.

A month had passed now with the Mobile clinic not coming to deliver meds for patients with chronic illnesses

Me: I'm sure it will come this time around.

Her: i doubt it's almost as if like they have forgotten about us disadvantaged people.

That made me mad why can't poor people be given the same medical treatment as rich people.

Me: let me make fire so i can make you something to eat.

She called my name as i was walking out,i stopped and looked at her.

Her: Know that I'm very grateful for what you do for me and God will richly bless you.

I smiled. My mom was big on faith and she always blessed me.

I went outside collected wood and made fire. We used a brazier as a stove where it was a tin with many holes and we put paper and coal to make fire,i just didn't like the smoke it made when the coal starts burning. I put papers first then wood and coal, started making that huge smoke and i put a chimney ontop and waited for the coals to be red and the smoke to vanish. That took about and hour. I took a kettle put water and boiled it, when the water were hot i poured for my mom to bath and i also poured for myself because we were using different basins then after i boiled water for tea. When we were done bathing, i got a bucket turned it upside down and got my mother to seat outside close to the brazier as we cannot put it inside the house because we scared the smoke might kill us or our small house will catch fire. I prepared tea with bread that roaches have made a home off, i know how disgusting that is but we have nothing else to eat. I took off the roaches and put it in on a plate. Our house was a 2 room, kitchen and a

bedroom only. We didn't have any furniture just the basics a bed, we used buckets for chairs. I took the bread and tea to my mom we still used those steel mugs and plates. I sat next to her and we ate. We prayed first, I closed my eyes and she said a short prayer then after we started eating.

Her: We should always be grateful even for the little things we have like this old bread we eating there's people who can't afford it.

Me: That's true mama

Her: Always be grateful my child always be thankful to God rather than complaining.

Me: Sometimes it's hard to be Thankful especially with the life we living there's not much to be thankful for.

Her: don't talk like that. You woke up this morning didn't you?

Me: Yes

Her: be Thankful for that, other people couldn't wake up in the morning and some are in hospital fighting for their lives.

Me: i guess so.

She stood up and slowly made her way around the yard then came back with a small rock and gave it to me.

Her: This is your Gratitude rock

Me: Gratitude rock?

Her: Yes. Everyday when you wake up in the morning, i want you to hold this Rock and name all the things you grateful for, Ofcause after you've said your morning prayers. I laughed a little, aii my mom.

Her: did you even say your morning prayers?

I looked down.

Her: Nissi you know how important it is to say your morning prayers

Me: i forgot mama I'm sorry.

She started coughing,i tried getting close to her but she stopped me.

Her: I'm fine just the devil trying to remind me that there's this demon of a disease living inside of me called TB.

Me: If it wasn't for this useless Mobile clinic you'll be finished with your TB medication. She looked at me with a smile on her face.

Her: Nissi my child what are you doing with your life?

Me: What do you mean?

Her: You 21 when is your life gonna start? I'm sure you have dreams.

Me: my dreams can wait mama i have to take care of you.

Her: I'm a grown woman Nissi I'm 50 years old i can take care of myself.

I kept quiet.

Her: Nissi I'm not getting young i want to see my grandchildren before i die

Me: mom please don't start.

Her: Are you what they call a lesbian?

Me: No

Her: Then when am i meeting my future son in law?

My mom mara eish she knows i don't like that conversation.

Me: i don't have time for boys

Her: I'm not saying have time for boys but I'm sure there's a boy you like

Me: Unfortunately there isn't,they all not my type

Her: What's your type?

Me: do you know how embarrassing it is to have this conversation with you?

Her: I'm your mother we have to talk about this.

Me: i don't think I'll ever date

Her: Why?

Me: After seeing what...

She looked at me

Her: Talk..

Me: After seeing what dad did to you.

Her: Ohhh Nissi. Don't punish every guy for your dad's mistakes.

Me: Well to me men are dogs and that's final.

Her: You talk like that because you haven't found a guy that's gonna blind you.

Me: Well unfortunately he can wait plus i wanna fulfill my dream of Being a chef first.

Her: Nissi it's every girl's dream to get married you know put on a white dress..

Me: Well it's not my dream mama and if you don't mind i don't wanna talk about that anymore.

Pssshhh! I can just imagine myself getting married, over my dead body! I'm not gonna let any man walk all over my heart especially seeing how my mother suffered in the name of Love,i ain't got time for cinderella stories. My mom and i sat there until she got tired and said she wanna go rest, i helped her to the bed then after i washed my hands with detoll, always made sure that we have dettol because my mom didn't want me to get sick. I searched around the house and damn we had nothing to eat for tonight, my mom's social grant is coming in 2 weeks time. The reason why they put her on that is because at some point she got very sick and her CD4 count was 19 the doctor said she is not fit to work then wrote her a letter to take to the Sassa offices so that she can get the grant money. While my mom was sleeping i went to see my friend Luzuko the only friend i had and she lived down the street with her baby, it's only the 2 of them. She works at some old boers farm where a truck comes everyday at 5am to pick them up then returns them at 17:00.

That boer and I'm sorry to call them that but he makes me angry he pays them with vegetables instead of cash and that's not fair his taking advantage because of our poor state. I got to her place and she was there for whatever reason she didn't go to work.

Me: Hi Zuko

Her: Hey Nissi

She invited me in. Unlike us Zuko was living in a shack.

Me: How are you?

Her: Not good. Mpumi has a fever she hardly slept last night she fell asleep now now and this damn mobile clinic doesn't wanna come

Mpumi was her daughter she was 2.

Me: She needs to go to the doctor.

She gave me a pissed off look.

Her: with what money will i take her to the doctor?

Me: her father is a cop!

Luzuko's baby daddy is a cop. Luzuko loved him and he promised her the world until Luzuko fell pregnant and Nigga forced her to abort because he didn't want another baby he already has a serious girl that he wanted to Marry and didn't wanna ruin things between them. Luzuko didn't abort and the baby daddy was angry because somehow the girlfriend found out and dumped him so nigga beat Luzuko almost to death because of that and she was 6 months pregnant that Mpumi was born disabled because of that. Another reason why i will never date!

Luzuko: Let's not go there

Me: Put that Bastard on child support

Her: You want him to kill me?

Me: He won't kill you

Her: How do you know? You talking reckless like that because you not in my situation.

Me: See that's why I'm never fucking with no nigga

Her: we all know that Virgin Mary.

Me: I'd rather die Virgin Mary than be a nigga's play toy.

Her: blah blah whatever whatever. While Mpumi is still sleeping let's go buy a washing

powder soap.

We went out and she locked the shack then we went to the shop. We had some supermarket nearby owned by a rich man who lived in town and his Son whose in varsity wants me. We got there and the son was There my mood changed.

Me: I'll wait for you here

Her: come on you still irritated by Lindokuhle?

Me: I'm disgusted by him, everytime i see him i feel lil vomiting

Her: You full of drama.

She went to buy and stood at the counter busy talking to Lindo and they were busy looking at me, i knew she was doing that on purpose to piss me off. After 5min she came to me and gave me R50.

Her: Lindo says you can buy yourself a cool drink.

I looked at him, he was smiling busy showing off his Gold tooth. I took that R50 and went to him all pissed.

Me: What do you take me for?

Her: excuse me?

Me: I'm not a prostitute that you can just give money too, ung'thenga nge R50 yazi ung'jwayela kabi (you buying me with R50)

Him: No that's not what..

I tore that R50 into pieces call me crazy mara serious i wasn't gonna let a nigga insult me like that.

He gave me a shocked face as if like "did she just do that"

Him: Did you have to tear it? Why didn't you just give it back to me?

Me: Because that's what i think of you!

I saw he was getting pissed

Him: Yazi if you were not a girl i would beat you up right now!

Me: i double dare you!

Him: Luzuko awuthathe le hlanya lakho nihambe (Luzuko take your crazy friend and go)

Luzuko came to get me

Luzuko: Asambe (let's go)

Me: You such a Vagina! Busy hiding behind the counter

Him: Uthini? (what did you say)

Me: Ung'zwile (you heard me)

I saw him getting angry and he walked out of the counter coming to me, Luzuko was pulling me by my hand.

Her: Asambe (let's go)

Me: No let's see what his gonna do

My hand was forming a fist. I don't take shit from anyone I'd like to think that i have a "warrior gene" because i like fighting even though i always get my ass kicked but i never back down from a fight.

PART 2 A BROKEN SOUL

At that moment i thought my heart was gonna stop, because honestly i am scared of fighting and i always get my ass whooped although I'm the one that initiate the fights. I heard a voice calling Lindo as he was approaching me and that was his father, coming from the back of the counter. Lindokuhle just looked at me then went to his father. Zuko and i went out of the store and as soon as we were out of the shop we started running till we got tired. She pushed me a little

Her: You crazy you almost got us whooped

Me: us? What you talking about "Us" Im the one who almost got ass whooped

Her: You lucky Zuko's dad showed up

Me: And between you and i, i was dead scared!

Her: He shouldve beat you, next time you'll know better than to fight with boys.

I always think that im superior because I always start fights with boys and they never hit me, you know they go by that stigma of "boys shouldn't hit girls" so that's why it's easy for me to piss on their heads. We went back to Zuko's place Mpumi was awake and crying. I picked her up while Zuko made her pap and milk. I fed Mpumi and Zuko did the laundry.

Zuko was 25 years old and very pretty unlike me she was a dark skin girl. I chilled with Zuko and Mpumi until 14:00. I go for choir practice at church 3 times a week

I had a beautiful voice or so I've been told. I went home first to freshen up and changed my outfit to a skirt, T-shirt, and sandals then left my mom who was still sleeping then made my way to the choir practice.

I got there and i was a bit late because everyone was there and I sat at the back because i was the least popular girl at church and i had a low self-esteem. Samkelisiwe aka Samke was the "it" girl at church and she thinks highly of herself and i don't blame her though because everyone puts her on a high pedestal. She lives at some suburbs at ext 14 Bond houses was a middle class neighbourhood and she drives that small Toyota yaris and was 19 Years old, how she made it to our church i have no idea. Sis'Mazet is our choir director. Haike Samke was seating there with some of our choir members worshipping her and she was busy bragging and gloating talking about she gonna study overseas when she's done with Matric, i rolled my eyes at that like bitch whatever.

Sis'Mazet told us to take our positions and we did.

Sis'Mazet: Okay we gonna sing one song you know to open up our vocal chords.

Samke: Well Sis'Mazet i was thinking that today we can do solos you know to see how talented we are and how not talented we are.

Sis'Mazet: Okay that will work.

Samke: Since i came up with the idea how about i start?

Sis'Mazet: Okay.

Samke stood there feeling herself, she was wearing a Jean, with a t-shirt and those big glasses.

She sang some song that killed her because it had high notes she was busy clearing her throat and saying she got flu, but i know that bitch doesn't know how to sing. After she sang people started clapping hands, and she sat down. Other people went too until it was my turn to go. I asked Sis'Mazet if i can skip she said i have to sing because others sang too. I have a bad stage freight. I went up and everyone was looking at me my palms were sweating and i was shaking. I started singing but my voice was shaky Samke was the first one to laugh.

Sis'Mazet: Samke please don't do that because no one did that to you when you were singing.

Samke: I'm sorry but she sounds like a dolphin that's being strangled.

That really made me more uncomfortable.

I have self-esteem issues because i come from a very poor background and i was always

teased about that, that it made me feel somehow about myself.

Sis'Mazet: Try again sisi I tried again but still. Samke continued laughing and other choir members joined in, i felt the tears stinging my eyes,i just ran out and their laughs got more louder. I walked home all crying. When i was closer i decided to seat by some bricks first, my heart was broken not because of what happened, but because of the fact that what happened brought back bad memories. I remember when i was still at primary school my school uniform was worn out and sometimes I'll go with it dirty at school because we didn't have soap to wash it then my teacher made me stand in front of the whole class busy making me her exhibit A, saying that coming to school dirty like this was not allowed. It was sad especially when the whole class burst with laughter, she didn't ask me why did i come to school looking like that so i could explain,that went on until high school, i was always the laughing stock at school and i was famous for that,at some point it was severe that at secondary i was made to stand in front of the whole assembly and the principal made fun of me. That made me to be a very introvert child. After going down memory lane i went home my mom was trying to make fire again.

Me: What are you doing?

Her: trying to make fire

Me: No sit down I'll make fire.

Her: You'll have to let me help you some time

Me: You'll help when you feeling better, now you still sick.

I got her a bucket and she sat down.

Her: How was the choir practice?

Me: i didn't wanna stress her with that

Me: it was okay mama

Her: What songs did you guys sing?

Me: just the usual..

Her: Okay you have to use that beautiful voice of yours that God gave you. I wanna hear you this Sunday at church.

I didn't answer her. I made the fire.

Her: What are we eating tonight?

Eish that question neh.

Me: im not sure but I'll check.

Her: Okay.

I never tell my mom when we run out of food i don't wanna stress her because of her health.

Her: Let me get inside it's starting to get cold.

She went inside the house.

Her: don't start late with cooking

Me: i won't mama.

I sat there thinking to myself what am i gonna do what's the plan because my mother really has to eat especially in her state. I sat there for a while with tears in my eyes saying a short prayer. After some time of crying i stood up and told my mom that we ran out of water and I'm going to get more. She said okay. I took my bucket and went to Zuko's place, shame poor Zuko didn't have much she gave me some pap and a lil bit of Mpumi's nespray. I went back home and put my bucket outside.

Mama: sowubuyile? (you back)

Me: Yes Mama

Her: Start cooking I'm sure the fire is ready.

Me: You know i was thinking that today you should eat healthy

Her: Healthy?

Me: Yes pap and milk, the doctor said you should eat healthy remember? And milk is healthy

She smiled. I made her the pap and nespray, and gave it to her.

She ate one spoon then looked at me.

Her: You not eating?

Me: I'm not hungry

Her: What did you eat?

Me: Sis' Mazet brought us sandwiches

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes Mama

Her: This milk tastes weird

Me: It has a lot of nutrients

I was lying i was very hungry, but it was important that my mother eats. After eating i took her dish and we went to sit by the fire and she was busy telling me

Izinganekwane (ancient stories) when it was getting more and more darker we went to sleep. I slept on the floor because i can't share the same bed with her. We said our

prayers and slept. I didn't sleep i was thinking with tears busy falling and i was sniffing.

Mama: Nissi are you okay?

Me: Yes Mama I'm fine

Her: Are you feeling cold?

Me: No mama

Her: Okay.

I tried sleeping but i couldn't and my mom was starting to cough, the kind of cough you couldn't ignore. I woke up because it went on for almost an hour. I lit the candle and helped her seat up. She asked me to get her a bucket and i did she was spitting out sputum that had blood in it and she looked tired of coughing because when she was coughing she would put her hand on her chest as if like her lungs and chest were painful and tired. I was sitting next to her and rubbing her at the back busy thinking to myself what am i gonna do if i lose my mother.

PART 3 BROKEN SOUL

That went on until eventually she fell asleep. I won't lie when that was happening i was very very scared, i mean what will i do if I ever lose my mother she's the only thing i have in this world mainly because my sister is never around she's out there doing her own things.

When she fell asleep, i went to wash my hands and went to sleep.

I woke up the following morning to do my usual chores and that was fetching water and do fire it was around 5am. Zuko came to my house while i was finishing off making the fire.

Luzuko: Hey Nissi

Me: Hey what are you doing here? Ain't you supposed to be going to work?

Her: no i skipped again. I heard that the mobile clinic is coming today

Me: Are you for real?

Her: Yes

Me: that's better especially because my mom has been very sick

Her: I'm taking Mpumi there too ill come and fetch you guys at around 6:00

Me: Okay let me wake my mom up

Her: Okay hurry

She rushed to her place leaving Me there.

I went to the house and woke my mom up

Her: What's wrong?

Me: I heard the clinic is coming today so we must go you know how full it's going to be

Her: Thank God, i knew God would make a way.

Me: How we gonna bath the fire is not ready yet

Her: Bring cold water we'll wash our faces and brush our teeth.

I did as i was told. After a an hour or so, Luzuko and Mpumi came. My mom was still sick all coughing etc, i was holding her hand helping her walk. Luzuko tried to help her walk too but my mom said she mustn't come near here because of her baby. While were walking i saw our opposite neighbour Mr Majenje taking out his car i think he was going to work, he worked at some firm e town. With how slow my mom was walking i had to ask him for a lift, and he agreed,he was a very kind man and didn't mind helping others. We got into his car and he dropped us at the clinic. It was full but at least it was divided into two parts. Patients with chronic illnesses had their own queue and patients who came to consult had their own queue. We went to our queue and it wasn't full we were number 5. The nurse gave us medication for 2months and some porridge that contained alot of nutrients and vitamins. The sad part was that this was the last time that the clinic was coming here and after 2months we will have to go to the one at town or e Loxion. We shall cross that bridge when we get there at least my mother got medication for 2months and that made me happy. When we were done Luzuko said it's fine we can leave her. We started walking home was a 1hr30min walk,and in between we would take breaks because my mom would get tired. The nurse gave me gloves and face masks to protect myself while I'm busy taking care of my mom. We eventually got home and my mom was dead tired so i helped her to her bed. At the clinic they gave us 3 packs of that instant porridge they were 2kgs.

I boiled water and prepared for my mom and myself, i had to eat something. After we were done eating i gave my mom her medication she drank And slept. Now i had to go and see what we gonna eat. I walked out and locked the door for my mom and i saw someone coming through the gate looking all charged up it was Mrs Majenje i met her halfway.

Her: Nissi uphi umamakho? (where's your mom)

Me: She's sleeping

Her: I wanna talk to her

She started walking to our door and i stopped her.

Her: Yazini (you know what) tell her my husband's car is not a public transport!

Ehh i wonder how she got the news so fast!

Her: I hope this was the first and last time asking my husband for a lift! Khona what will people think? Or what? she wants to take my place and be Mrs Majenje?

Me: No mam'majenje the thing is..

Her: And she's sick! My kids ride that car what if they get sick?

Aii this woman always takes things to the max!

Her: If one of my kids get sick Uzong'tholakahle! (you will know me)

She walked out of our yard in her nightdress with a towel wrapped around her waist and it was 10am now why she doesn't change you will never know.

I started walking and made my way to the main road, while i was walking i saw someone selling vegetables&Fruits and i went to them to ask if they had worn out stock. She gave me veges&fruits that where about to be spoiled and i thanked her then walked home, at least we have air to breath for the next coming days. I walked back home and passed by the supermarket Lindokuhle was standing by the door as soon as he saw me he ran up to me, aii kaze ufunani (what does he want)

Him: Nissi!

I tried to ignore him but from the way he was screaming my name it was hard i stopped and he caught up with me..

uLindokuhle was a bit good looking was dark and tall.

Him: Hi

Me: Hey

We started walking side by side

Him: Vele you hate me?

Me: Who said i hate you?

Him: because even today you still don't wanna go out with me.

I rolled my eyes..

Him: Aii Nissi i swear you one hell of a girl

Me: that's because angifuni ukuthi ningijwayele kabi (that's because i don't want you guys getting used to me)

He laughed.

Him: Okay here's the deal go out on one date with me then i promise that i will never bother you again

Me: Why would I wanna go on a date with you?

Him: because i like you..

I blushed a lil, Phela I've never dated before and that's because guys never liked me. It was mainly because I wasn't popular, and wasn't neat enough at school some guy even went as far as telling me that he would never date me even if i can look like Beyonce. Some said I'm not beautiful I'm just a yellow bone, so for Lindo to like me that's a huge deal.

Lindo: So what do you say?

Me: After this date you promise to leave me alone?

Him: Yes

Me: Okay.

Him: Good, so I'll pick you up later?

Me: Kanti it's today?

Him: Yebo

Me: Okay ke see you later.

I nodded my head and he started walking back to the shop and i walked home all laughing a boy asked me out. I got home and washed the veges then cooked them. We

was gonna eat pap and tomato gravy.

Luzuko and Mpumi came to chill at my place we sat outside and when my mom woke up she came to join us. I told them about the date Aii and they went crazy, it was as if like i told them that im getting married or something.

Aike the time came for my date and i wore my best church dress and sandals, i combed my short hair and put a hair band that had a flower at the front. Luzuko went as far as putting make up on me. My mom said i should go enjoy she would be fine and Zuko vouched to help her until i come back. I walked to the shop were i was going to meet uLindo and i was very nervous i don't wanna lie. I waited at the door and he finished cashing up then closed the supermarket and we went to his Polo.

Him: You look beautiful

I smiled and looked away

Me: Thank you.

Him: So where do you wanna eat out?

Me: i don't know surprise me.

Phela i wasn't familiar with restaurants, the last time i went to a restaurant was back when my dad was still alive he used to take me to kfc after that never. We drove to town and he stopped next to Nandos. We went inside and damn it looked expensive.

We went to order and he told me i can order anything i want. I looked at that menu and it looked expensive. I just told him that I'll have what his having. He ordered 2 quarter chickens with buns and chips then 2 cans of coke and we went to our table..

Him: Thank you for agreeing to go out with me..

Me: It's Okay.

The date was awkward though no much talking.

Our food came and we ate, i was eating small portions Phela have to be a lady i can't just dive in, uzothini (what will he say)

Him: Are you enjoying your meal?

Me: Yes and thank you

Him: Yazi now that I'm getting to know you, you actually sweet and seem shy too.

Me: It's only been one day hau don't think you know me.

He chuckled.

Him: And here comes the attitude..

I smiled.

We ate while talking and Laughing i was starting to feel very comfortable around him.

When we were done he took me out to watch a movie I've never been to a cinema before and we closed our day with eating Ice creams at a park.

Him: i really enjoyed this date.

Me: me too

Him: Really?

Me: Ya

Him: So does that mean we can do it again?

Me: Maybe.

At around 18:00 he drove me home, i really didn't want him to know where I live but he insisted so i just had him drop me off at the corner. He kissed me on my cheek and asked to see me again i agreed Since i didn't have a phone we was gonna meet at the shop. I got out of the car and watched him drive off. After a while i heard someone saying "stwetla" behind me there's only one person who calls me that i turned around and it was my sister i was soo happy to see her i hugged her, how i got that name don't ask.

Me: When did you arrive?

Her: a few hours ago and i heard you went out on a date with your new bf

Me: His not my bf hau

Her: For now yes his not mara nje we'll see

I laughed.

Her: So let's go home and you'll tell me about your new bf

Me: and wena you'll tell me about the city

Her: Deal.

I enjoyed all the stories my sister told me about the City and i wish to go there one day e
Josi the land of dreams.

PART 4 BROKEN SOUL

We got home, my mom and Zuko were sitting at the kitchen waiting for me vele.

Zuko: So stwetla how was the date?

I looked at my sister and she shrugged her shoulders.

Zuko: We've been friends for quiet a long time and you never told me that your nick name is Stwetla

Me: My name is Bennice and my nick name is Nissi not stwetla

Zuko: How did you even get the name stwetla?

Fanny: Well the story behind that name is that..

Me: there is no story behind that name

Mama: im still waiting to hear about how the date went..

Zuko: Ohhh ya the date.

She stood up

Her: Sit down and tell us.

Me: Well there's nothing to tell just that we ate at Nandos then he took me out to watch a movie and drove me home

Fanny: That's it?

Me: that's it

Fanny: No kissing?

Mom: Not everyone is like you Fanny.

Fanny: There is nothing wrong with kissing. I take kissing as like saying "hello"

Yeap that's my sister for you.

Zuko: As much as i wanna stay and listen to the rest of the story on how the date went but I'm sorry i can't it's already late i have to bath Mpumi and put her to bed.

Mom: Thank you Zuko for keeping me company

Zuko: It's a pleasure.

Fanny and i Walked Zuko halfway to her place then came back home, but we didn't go inside we sat outside by the fire.

Fanny: You like this guy neh?

Me: Who? Lindokuhle?

Her: ya whoever his name is.

Fanny didn't know Lindokuhle, she moved to jhb before the supermarket was opened.

Me: Not exactly i just agreed to go out with him so that he can leave me alone.

Fanny: I see

Me: And how is jhb?

Her: Life in jhb is fast as always but other than that it's very good.

Me: i wish to go there one Day

Her: You should, how about we go back together and you can search for a college

Me: You know i can't leave mom

She looked a bit irritated.

Her: Stwetla you were not created to look after mom forever. You have a life of your own to live i mean you should chase your dreams first so that if and when mom dies you well taken care off.

Me: It's not that easy.

Her: It is easy it's just you whose making it hard

Me: there's nothing you gonna say that's gonna change my mind Fanny

Her: Aike suit yourself.

My mom told us to get inside it's getting late.

We went inside and locked the door.

Fanny: Tomorrow we going shopping stwetla i wanna buy you a few clothes and a

phone then we can get groceries.

I smiled at her and my mom didn't look like she liked the idea

Fanny: Is there anything you want me to get for you mama?

Mama: Nothing I'm fine.

My mom really doesn't like what Fanny does.

Mama: When are you gonna quit this life Fanny? Living as a prostitute that won't end well.

Fan: Let's not go there mama

Mama: I always look at you and wonder what I did so wrong

Fanny was starting to get a bit pissed, unlike me Fanny can fight and she's full of shit..

Fanny: Are you saying I'm a mistake? Or a curse?

Mama: You will never be a mistake nor a curse. You my child and I love you Fanny I will always love you but I don't like what you do, it was never my dream for your life to end up like this

Her: It was not my choice either but I do what I do to survive.

Mama: You can get out there's still time, God..

Fanny: Mama Please! I didn't come here to be judged by you or you telling me how much I've disappointed you! I'm here to see you and my sister if that is too much then just tell me so that I can leave!

Me: Fanny mom is just trying to..

Her: Trying to do what Stwetla? Make me feel bad about being a prostitute asnt like I don't feel bad enough, Hai nawe ungang'bhori

(don't bore me).

My mom smiled

Mama: we didn't mean to upset you and we very happy that you here.

My mom said that while walking to the bedroom.

Mama: can you please bring me my pills Nissi..

Me: Ofcourse mama

I got her water and pills then gave her, she drank and asked us to join her to say a Goodnight prayer. Fanny didn't wanna join in she sat at the kitchen busy on her phone.

My mom said a touching prayer she also prayed for fanny then slept. I went to the kitchen and sat across fanny looking at her. She gave me a serious look.

Her: Wanna say something?

Me: Why you gotta treat mom like this?

Her: Why she got to be all up in my business for?

Me: You her daughter she's worried about you

Her: Stwetla I've been doing this for 8 years okay? I've got this!

Me: Don't you think 8 years is a bit too much? To be doing what you do?

Her: To be a prostitute? Say it because it's my job!

I do wish that I make it some day to take care of my sister before this life kills her.

Fanny: Stwetla I don't wanna be born in poverty then die in poverty! And that's where your life is heading if you don't take a stand and do something to better yourself!

Me: I still have to take care of mom..

Her: Don't tell me about mom! She's the one who got us to live like this. Mom has never worked a day in her life instead she kept on running after our useless dad and other men who tried to rape me at one point, and where did this life got her? She's HIV+ now!

What was fanny talking about!

Me: Fanny don't talk like that!

Fanny: No someone has to tell the truth at some point!

Mama: You've got it all wrong

I didn't notice my mom who was now standing behind me.

Mama: Fanny i tried my level best to raise you well. You cannot blame me for the life you chose!

Me: i blame you mama! I wouldn't be a prostitute right now had you left dad and went to look for a proper job and took care of us!

Fanny was now angry and shouting.

Mama: How would i have gotten a job when i didn't have education?

Fanny: i don't know!! Do what a mother would've done! Any mother who loved their kids would've done anything to take care of her kids.

Me: Fanny!

Fanny: Fanny what? We were soo poor in this house that we became a joke of this whole hood i couldn't take it anymore!

She was already crying.

Her: I'm ashamed of this life, but mostly im ashamed of having you as a mother! I even told my friends that you dead!

That was deep i saw my mom sitting down.

Mama: You seem to forget the good I've done for you Fanny! Do you know how many times i had to go to bed with an empty stomach, the last meal i had I'd sacrifice it for you and Nissi! Your dad would vanish for months and I had to go around the whole neighbourhood begging for food! I went as far as dump star diving so that at least I could get food for you to eat and today you telling me that you ashamed of me?

My mom was now crying too.

Fanny: i can't be here right now, this environment is not good! And you act like you a saint but you evil!

She gave me money then went to take her bag

Mama: Fanny it's late you cannot leave

She ignored her.

My mom stood up and tried to stop her but Fanny pushed her hard that she fell!

Fanny: i never wanna see you again! I hate you! Do my sister a favour and die she's too young to be taking care of you!

She said that and walked out all crying. I wondered why Fanny was soo mad at my mom what am i missing?

I helped my mom get up and sat her on the bed.

Me: Are you Okay mama?

Her: I'll be okay i think i hurt my leg

Me: Why would Fanny do that

Her: she had every right to do that

Me: no mama she has no right.

Mama: im not as innocent as you think i am Nissi

Me: What are you talking about?

She started crying.

Me: Mama what's wrong?

Her: i think it's time you know the truth

Me: What truth

Her: i.. Ohh Lord i don't even know how to tell you this but before i became a Christian i used to be a heavy drinker.

Okay that doesn't sound soo bad

Her: You almost died when you were a baby Nissi

Me: I know mama you told me that i was diagnosed with Pneumonia
She shook her head.

Her: Your father used to disappear for months and i needed money to support you and your sister so i started prostituting, your dad didn't give me HIV I'm the one who gave him

I looked at my mom like what!

Her: i was soo reckless that i used to feed you beer and brandy when you were a baby and that's why you used to get sick.

I couldn't believe what my mom was telling me.

Her: Most of the men i used to sleep with they..

Me: They what mama..

Her: They used to rape Fanny, and you were mostly molested..

I felt the whole room spinning

Me: No mama, i don't remember none of that, i don't remember being molested

Her: It's because you were too young Nissi.

I couldn't believe what my mom was telling me right now, i walked out of the door and started running, with tears in my eyes. All along i thought my mom was perfect but i was wrong

PART 5 BROKEN SOUL

I ran straight to Zuko's shack but before i got there i decided to stand at the corner to process what my mother told me. I know that i was sick as a baby and that went on until i was 13 all along i thought that i had Pneumonia for real but she was the one who was keeping me sick all along.

After some great deal of crying i made my way to Luzuko's shack and knocked. She opened after like 10min but first asked who it is.

Her: Oh my word Nissi do you have any idea what time it is?

I shook my head no.

Her: You look upset what's wrong?

Me: can i come in please?

Her: Yes please come in

I went inside, and sat on her long worn out couch, wiping my tears.

Her: Yini sisi? (what's wrong)

I didn't answer her.

She came to sit next to me busy comforting me.

Her: Talk to me

Me: i don't even know where to start.

Her: Start anywhere

Me: My mom has kept some secrets from me

Her: What secrets?

Me: Deep dark secrets

Her: Uyang'lahla manje (you lost me)

Me: I've been sick most of my life doctors thought it was Pneumonia, it went on until i was 13. At some point i would get very sick that I won't be able to get out of bed for a week.

Her: i remember you used to tell me that.

Me: All along i thought it was Pneumonia only to find that my mom has been feeding me alcohol since from i was a baby

Her: Yooh that's deep

Me: and worse my sister was raped by her boyfriends and i was molested by them.

Zuko: Haibo Nissi what are you telling me?

Me: injalo (it's like that)

She clapped her hands.

Her: How did you find out?

Me: my mom just blurred it out

Her: I never thought your mom was capable of such, she seems like a humble soul

Me: don't let such fool you, it's those humble souls that are most evil!

Her: Don't talk like that Nissi she's still your mom.

Me: How can my own mother do this to me mara? She almost killed me! And here i am taking care of her which i don't even know why! I even feel like she should die right now!

Yes after hearing that i wish that she could die! Because she almost killed me!

Zuko: I'm not gonna sit here and say forgive her because i don't know how you feel, but all i can say is try not to allow the anger to overpower you.

That was an understatement i was beyond being angry.

Me: can i sleep here tonight?

Her: Yes you can

We all squeezed in her small bed and slept.....I stayed at Zuko's place for 3 days until she forced me to go home and make peace with my mom.

I wasn't keen on that idea but at some point i had to go and face her.

I slowly Walked home, and went through the gate then i found her pouring water

outside, looked like she been cleaning. When she saw me she walked up to me and hugged me.

Her: Nissi my child whoa! Thank God that you fine, where were you? I was very worried about you..

I gave her an irritated look.

Her: i know that you still angry about what i told you the other day but Nissi Can you please forgive me i cannot undo the past and that's why I'm apologising for it.

Me: and what will your apology do? Can it fix the fact that you almost killed me? Or that Fanny got sexually assaulted by your boyfriends?

Her: No Nissi but i prayed to God th..

Me: Yey don't talk about God! How you be soo evil then mention God's name! Ohh i see that's why you became a Christian so that you can hide behind the church and hide your evilness by the church and God!

I saw her putting her hand on her chest and closing her eyes as if like those words really hit deep.

Her: Kodwa i cannot change the past nje Nissi! Can we try to move on?

Me: Are you kidding me? You almost killed me how do we move on from that?

Her: but you didn't die Nissi, with God's grace you still alive.

She was really getting to me with her Godly talks. I went inside the house, put water in the basin and bathe, i didn't even heat up the water i bath with the water Cold.

After bathing i clothed then took the money my sister gave me and went to town, she gave me R2000 when i counted it. I bought new clothes and a phone then went to spur and had me a nice meal. I chilled at town until 16:00 then after went to climb a taxi home. I bought a bit of food for myself too while i was at it. The taxi dropped me off by the supermarket, because when you come to Duva-park the supermarket is what you see first. I passed by there and saw Lindo locking up. I went up to him.

Me: Hey

He looked at me and smiled

Him: Hey you.

Me: Kunjani? (how are you)

Him: Ngiyaphila wena? (I'm fine thanks and you)

Me: I'm all good

He looked at the plastics i was carrying.

Him: looks like someone hit the jackpot

Me: i wish. My sister bought me this

Him: What a good sis you have

I smiled.

Him: i wish i can chat but i really have to get home

Me: Okay see you around

Him: do you have a phone?

Me: Yes i do.

I bought me a Huawei Y220 was cheap around R500

We exchanged numbers and he also helped me download WhatsApp while we were it, said it will be easier to communicate. He kissed me on my cheek and left. I Walked home and my mom was not around, i wondered were she went but i didn't care. I just started fitting my clothes and shoes, and ya i liked them. My mom came in holding a bucket full of water and she looked very tired.

Her: Nissi please come and help me.

I looked at her and clicked my tongue then went back to what i was doing.

It took her 5min to get the bucket off her head that it almost fell.

She sat down catching her breath.

Her: i never knew that fetching water was this hard

Me: and I've been doing it since like forever.

Her: i feel bad now I shouldve helped you every now and then, but my health denied me.
Me: And whose fault is that?
She didn't answer.
She looked at the clothes.
Her: They look beautiful
Me: Thanks i guess.
Her: i tried looking for something to cook but looks like we don't have food.
Me: Akere you deny when Fanny wanna support us.
Her: i can't accept Fanny's money because if i accept it that will mean I support what she does and i don't support her gambling with her life like that.
Me: You put her through that.
Her: i know and i don't deny i was a bad mother to you and Fanny, but now I'm trying to right my wrongs.
Me: Whatever.
I took my phone and went out to call my sister.
Her: Hello
Me: Hey sis
Her: Stwetla?
Me: Yeap the one and only.
Her: wena na you have a phone now
Me: Yes i bought it today
Her: Halala!
Me: And all thanks to you
Her: I'm glad to take care of my sister
Me: Mama told me everything
Her: Everything?
Me: Yes how she fed me Alcohol and her boyfriends raping you.
Her: Really? Did she tell you that she allowed the boyfriends to rape me while she sat there and said nothing!
Me: She never told me that!
Her: Mom is evil Stwetla don't be fooled by her "church act".
My sister and i stayed on the phone for a couple of minutes busy talking about my mom she was telling me about how evil mom was and i couldn't believe half of the things she told me they were scary especially my mom leaving her with her boyfriends to rape her! I was very furious after all I've sacrificed for my mom and i hear this about her!.....
.....days went by then weeks and almost a month with me and my mom not getting along, her medication was finishing she was only left with pills that were gonna last her for a week, she was getting worn out and losing weight mostly because she wasn't eating that well and they decided to close her sassa cash for whatever reason so we didn't have money coming in, but my sister was sending me cash every now and then so i was well off. Me and Lindo we started getting close that we decided to start dating and he was my first bf but we haven't got sexual yet was about 2 weeks now since we started dating. I spent all my time chilling with him at the shop because that's where i mostly charged my phone. This whole experience has drawn me and my sister close. I woke up one morning to my mom coughing, usually I'd panic when such happened but now, i cared less about her health. When i get to the point of caring I'd remember what she put me and my sister through then that would set me back. I haven't seen Zuko in a while mostly because Lindo was taking all my attention. I got out of my aerospace-matress that my sister bought me.
Mama: Nissi Can you please get me a glass of water my chest is painful and dry.
I went to check the bucket and it was empty.
Me: There's no water
Her: i don't think I'll be able to get any water today can you please go and get us some

water

Me: the nerve! Why would i wanna get you water?

Her: Nissi you gonna hate me until when?

Me: until forever!

Her: i don't know what to say anymore.

Me: What kind of a mother are you? How you let your boyfriends rape your daughter and you keep quiet and say nothing!

Her: I'm not that Evil Nissi. When all that was taking place i wasn't around the house i would never watch my child to be violated like that!

Me: liar! Fanny told me that you watched her getting raped

Her: That's not true, i swear on my life i didn't know.

My mom was pissing me off how can she lie like that! I went to fetch water came back and bath then after went about my business the remaining water in the bucket i poured them on the grass outside leaving her there busy coughing and crying asking God to take her life she's suffered enough, Mxm hypocrite! My sister and i we the ones who suffered a lot!

PART 6 BROKEN SOUL

I ran straight to Zuko's shack but before i got there i decided to stand at the corner to process what my mother told me. I know that i was sick as a baby and that went on until i was 13 all along i thought that i had Pneumonia for real but she was the one who was keeping me sick all along.

After some great deal of crying i made my way to Luzuko's shack and knocked. She opened after like 10min but first asked who it is.

Her: Oh my word Nissi do you have any idea what time it is?

I shook my head no.

Her: You look upset what's wrong?

Me: can i come in please?

Her: Yes please come in

I went inside, and sat on her long worn out couch, wiping my tears.

Her: Yini sisi? (what's wrong)

I didn't answer her.

She came to sit next to me busy comforting me.

Her: Talk to me

Me: i don't even know where to start.

Her: Start anywhere

Me: My mom has kept some secrets from me

Her: What secrets?

Me: Deep dark secrets

Her: Uyang'lahla manje (you lost me)

Me: I've been sick most of my life doctors thought it was Pneumonia, it went on until i was 13. At some point i would get very sick that I won't be able to get out of bed for a week.

Her: i remember you used to tell me that.

Me: All along i thought it was Pneumonia only to find that my mom has been feeding me alcohol since from i was a baby

Her: Yooh that's deep

Me: and worse my sister was raped by her boyfriends and i was molested by them.

Zuko: Haibo Nissi what are you telling me?

Me: injalo (it's like that)

She clapped her hands.

Her: How did you find out?

Me: my mom just blurred it out

Her: I never thought your mom was capable of such, she seems like a humble soul

Me: don't let such fool you, it's those humble souls that are most evil!

Her: Don't talk like that Nissi she's still your mom.

Me: How can my own mother do this to me mara? She almost killed me! And here i am taking care of her which i don't even know why! I even feel like she should die right now!

Yes after hearing that i wish that she could die! Because she almost killed me!

Zuko: I'm not gonna sit here and say forgive her because i don't know how you feel, but all i can say is try not to allow the anger to overpower you.

That was an understatement i was beyond being angry.

Me: can i sleep here tonight?

Her: Yes you can

We all squeezed in her small bed and slept.....I stayed at Zuko's place for 3 days until she forced me to go home and make peace with my mom.

I wasn't keen on that idea but at some point i had to go and face her.

I slowly Walked home, and went through the gate then i found her pouring water outside, looked like she been cleaning. When she saw me she walked up to me and hugged me.

Her: Nissi my child whoa! Thank God that you fine, where were you? I was very worried about you..

I gave her an irritated look.

Her: i know that you still angry about what i told you the other day but Nissi Can you please forgive me i cannot undo the past and that's why I'm apologising for it.

Me: and what will your apology do? Can it fix the fact that you almost killed me? Or that Fanny got sexually assaulted by your boyfriends?

Her: No Nissi but i prayed to God th..

Me: Yey don't talk about God! How you be soo evil then mention God's name! Ohh i see that's why you became a Christian so that you can hide behind the church and hide your evilness by the church and God!

I saw her putting her hand on her chest and closing her eyes as if like those words really hit deep.

Her: Kodwa i cannot change the past nje Nissi! Can we try to move on?

Me: Are you kidding me? You almost killed me how do we move on from that?

Her: but you didn't die Nissi, with God's grace you still alive.

She was really getting to me with her Godly talks. I went inside the house, put water in the basin and bathe, i didn't even heat up the water i bath with the water Cold.

After bathing i clothed then took the money my sister gave me and went to town, she gave me R2000 when i counted it. I bought new clothes and a phone then went to spur and had me a nice meal. I chilled at town until 16:00 then after went to climb a taxi home. I bought a bit of food for myself too while i was at it. The taxi dropped me off by the supermarket, because when you come to Duva-park the supermarket is what you see first. I passed by there and saw Lindo locking up. I went up to him.

Me: Hey

He looked at me and smiled

Him: Hey you.

Me: Kunjani? (how are you)

Him: Ngiyaphila wena? (I'm fine thanks and you)

Me: I'm all good

He looked at the plastics i was carrying.

Him: looks like someone hit the jackpot

Me: i wish. My sister bought me this

Him: What a good sis you have

I smiled.

Him: i wish i can chat but i really have to get home

Me: Okay see you around

Him: do you have a phone?

Me: Yes i do.

I bought me a Huawei Y220 was cheap around R500

We exchanged numbers and he also helped me download WhatsApp while we were it, said it will be easier to communicate. He kissed me on my cheek and left. I Walked home and my mom was not around, i wondered were she went but i didn't care. I just started

fitting my clothes and shoes, and ya i liked them. My mom came in holding a bucket full of water and she looked very tired.

Her: Nissi please come and help me.

I looked at her and clicked my tongue then went back to what i was doing.

It took her 5min to get the bucket off her head that it almost fell.

She sat down catching her breath.

Her: i never knew that fetching water was this hard

Me: and I've been doing it since like forever.

Her: i feel bad now I shouldve helped you every now and then, but my health denied me.

Me: And whose fault is that?

She didn't answer.

She looked at the clothes.

Her: They look beautiful

Me: Thanks i guess.

Her: i tried looking for something to cook but looks like we don't have food.

Me: Akere you deny when Fanny wanna support us.

Her: i can't accept Fanny's money because if i accept it that will mean I support what she does and i don't support her gambling with her life like that.

Me: You put her through that.

Her: i know and i don't deny i was a bad mother to you and Fanny, but now I'm trying to right my wrongs.

Me: Whatever.

I took my phone and went out to call my sister.

Her: Hello

Me: Hey sis

Her: Stwetla?

Me: Yeap the one and only.

Her: wena na you have a phone now

Me: Yes i bought it today

Her: Halala!

Me: And all thanks to you

Her: I'm glad to take care of my sister

Me: Mama told me everything

Her: Everything?

Me: Yes how she fed me Alcohol and her boyfriends raping you.

Her: Really? Did she tell you that she allowed the boyfriends to rape me while she sat there and said nothing!

Me: She never told me that!

Her: Mom is evil Stwetla don't be fooled by her "church act".

My sister and i stayed on the phone for a couple of minutes busy talking about my mom she was telling me about how evil mom was and i couldn't believe half of the things she told me they were scary especially my mom leaving her with her boyfriends to rape her! I was very furious after all I've sacrificed for my mom and i hear this about her!.....

.....days went by then weeks and almost a month with me and my mom not getting along, her medication was finishing she was only left with pills that were gonna last her for a week, she was getting worn out and losing weight mostly because she wasn't eating that well and they decided to close her sassa cash for whatever reason so we didn't have money coming in, but my sister was sending me cash every now and then so i was well off. Me and Lindo we started getting close that we decided to start dating and

he was my first bf but we haven't got sexual yet was about 2 weeks now since we started dating. I spent all my time chilling with him at the shop because that's where i mostly charged my phone. This whole experience has drawn me and my sister close. I woke up one morning to my mom coughing, usually I'd panic when such happened but now, i cared less about her health. When i get to the point of caring I'd remember what she put me and my sister through then that would set me back. I haven't seen Zuko in a while mostly because Lindo was taking all my attention. I got out of my aerospace-matress that my sister bought me.

Mama: Nissi Can you please get me a glass of water my chest is painful and dry.

I went to check the bucket and it was empty.

Me: There's no water

Her: i don't think I'll be able to get any water today can you please go and get us some water

Me: the nerve! Why would i wanna get you water?

Her: Nissi you gonna hate me until when?

Me: until forever!

Her: i don't know what to say anymore.

Me: What kind of a mother are you? How you let your boyfriends rape your daughter and you keep quiet and say nothing!

Her: I'm not that Evil Nissi. When all that was taking place i wasn't around the house i would never watch my child to be violated like that!

Me: liar! Fanny told me that you watched her getting raped

Her: That's not true, i swear on my life i didn't know.

My mom was pissing me off how can she lie like that! I went to fetch water came back and bath then after went about my business the remaining water in the bucket i poured them on the grass outside leaving her there busy coughing and crying asking God to take her life she's suffered enough, Mxm hypocrite! My sister and i we the ones who suffered a lot!

PART 7 BROKEN SOUL

I went out to my boyfriend and luckily he was there. He was behind the counter busy working, i waited for him at the door and he asked some worker to hold the font for him then he came to me. He hugged me and kissed me.

Him: You looking good

I blushed

Me: Thank you.

We went to chill outside, he got us camping chairs and a cool drink.

Him: I have bad news for you.

Me: What bad news?

Him: I'm going back to school soon.

Lindo was studying at UJ i wasn't sure about what he was studying.

Me: ohw

Him: but i promise to call you almost everyday

Me: Okay, how is varsity life by the way?

Him: It's not too bad, just alot of work.

Me: And partying?

Him: i don't do much of that im not wild

Me: i wish i can go to Jozi one day totally sounds like a good place.

Him: it is but it's also a bit dangerous especially if you go there and you don't know your story.

Me: Well i know my story soo I'll blend in perfectly

My phone rang while i was talking, and it was my sister, i answered.

Me: Hey sis

Her: Stwetla! How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Her: I'm fine. I got your missed call

Me: Yes i was asking if you can send me cash a bit earlier this month

Her: Why?

Me: we ran out of groceries

Her: when you say "we" does that include mom?

Me: Yes..

Her: She's old she can take care of herself I'm only gonna send you money. I'm supporting you because you are my baby sister and not her

Me: She has ran out of medication and she started getting really sick

Her: Stwetla i don't care! Are you forgetting about what she put us through? I shouldn't be supporting you she's the one who should be supporting you.

She has a point there.

Her: imagine you had alcohol In your system when you were still a baby I'm talking about a few days old. Stwetla you were molested before you could even say the word "Mama" and where was mom? She acted like she never saw what was happening.

I was getting emotional

Her: other things are unforgivable, not only that she used to drop you a lot when you were a baby and that is due to her drunk state! Mom was never good to us and she's still not good.

Me: i guess i shouldn't forgive her

Her: Hello no! If it wasn't for me taking care of you when you were young you was gonna be dead now,did you even know the day i killed dad what really happened?

Me: What happened?

Her: He wanted to rape both of us but i had to protect you stwetla i couldn't let you be violated like that the trauma and depression behind that is too much, you my little sister i love you and I'll always take care of you. Don't forget that we only got each other, i

need you as much as you need me.

Me: That's true

Her: Look i have to go I'll call you later or tomorrow

Me: Okay bye.

I hung up and took a deep breath.

Lindo: is everything okay?

Me: just family problems

Him: Wanna talk about it?

Me: Not exactly.

Him: Okay

After a few seconds i decided to tell him.

Me: i found out not so long ago that my mom wasn't honest with Me.

Him: I'm listening..

I told him everything, i mean it was time i start being honest with him he is my bf. I saw him getting very shocked.

Him: That's... I... I don't have the right words to express how shocked i am

Me: You see how do i forgive someone who has done that to me, and worse it's my mom! My own flesh and blood and not a stranger! did she not love us? And now she's sick i have to take care of her how fair is that?

Him: is she even sorry about what happened?

Me: Yes she is, and she's a "Christian now"

Him: i have no words I'm very shocked that a mother can be capable of doing such to her own children.

Me: tell me about it.

Lindo and i chilled there until in the afternoon then i decided to go home. My mom was sitting by the fire Eating bread and tea i wondered where she got that,Zuko came out of the house with a massaging cream. She looked at me then went to massage my mom's swollen feet.

Mama: Thank you Zuko, if it wasn't for you i don't know what i would've done..

She said that with tears escaping her eyes.

I rolled my eyes.

Me: someone please shoot me right now! Where did you even get bread?

Zuko: i bought for her!

Me: with what money?

Her: i got my social Grant for Mpumi remember?

Me: ohh ya thanks to the government or else you could be starving to death!

Mama: Nissi don't be like that

Me: i don't remember talking to you!

Mama: i don't know what i did to you for you to hate me soo much

That statement made me angry.

Me: You don't know what you've done, really? How about you trying to kill me! How about you putting Fanny through all that trauma,did you even love us?

Her: if i didn't love you i would've left you to die. Even though I'm the one who was responsible for your sickness, but i was always there when you weren't feeling well. I use to put you on my back and walk to the clinic for hours whether it was raining, cold, or hot i never missed any of your appointments. Nissi i regret what i did to you, i wish that i can go back and fix things but unfortunately I cannot, we have to move forward.

Me: You can move forward but i will never move forward,i cannot forgive you, God should do us a favour and just take your life!

Zuko: Nissi!!!

Me: Yini ke wena? (what's wrong with you)

Zuko: Yazi you selfish! Yes your mother did alot of things that she's not proud off but she's apologising for them ain't she?

Me: And you think apologising for them will make me feel better? Is it supposed to make me feel happy? I almost died because of..

Zuko: Whoa! Phola sisi Ave uno drama bo! (relax, and stop being full of drama)

Mama: Akunandaba Zuko meke (it doesn't matter Zuko just leave her)

Zuko: No mama! Nissi do you know how much some of us would kill to have a mother, and wena you have one mara you don't appreciate her!

Zuko's parents died when she was young or so she says.

Me: do you want her? Because if you do then you can take her! I'm sure she's gonna make a good mother to you!

Zuko: Nissi you and your mom used to be very close! You used to care about her alot, and all of that changed after she did something good and became honest with you and told you the truth then after apologised.

Me: Zuko what she did is beyond unforgivable, she needs to burn in hell for what she did to me and Fanny! And especially what she did to fanny!

Mama: You believe everything that Fanny says?

Me: Yes i believe fanny over you because unlike you Fanny has no reason to lie to me!

Mama: Nissi one thing you don't know about Fanny and i told myself that im never gonna tell you this but now i feel forced to tell you. Fanny is not a good soul at all I've seen from since she was young, she used to lie alot and was very Manipulative! Some of the things she used to say where untrue especially when she said your father wanted to rape her that's not true.

Me: Wow! So now you gonna protect your dead husband and believe him over my sister your own daughter!

Zuko: Can't you see that Fanny is turning you against your mother?

Me:How? By telling the truth! If fanny didn't start havoc with you that night was you even gonna tell me about what you used to do to us?

Her: Ofcause i was gonna tell you, i was just waiting for the right time for you to grow up so you could understand!

She started coughing and her cough was now worse.

Her: the clinic has stopped coming and i don't know how much more time I have left, but i wanted us to make peace before its too late!

Me: Mxm peace my left foot, go to hell!

I walked to sit alone a bit far from home. I couldn't believe my mom right now i took out my phone and sent my sister a call back, she didn't take long to call

Her: Hello

Me: i hope i didn't disturb you.

Her: No what's wrong?

Me: Can you believe mom is denying everything right now? She's pinning everything on you!

Her: What!

Me: she's saying you lying on her

Her: that witch!

Me: she's unbelievable

Her: i wish she burns in hell for this! How can she say I'm lying while she the one who is lying!

Me: i don't wanna deal with mom anymore

Her: And she's abusing you! How can she expect you to take care of her what if you get sick too? You young stwetla imagine dying of TB that you got from mom aii sies maan! I was crying that was true, what if i have contracted her sicknesses.

Me: i had to sacrifice my life for her im tired Fanny of this life, I'm too young to be living like this! A mother is supposed to take care of her child not the other way around.

Her: i can't allow this to go on anymore, i can't allow you to live like this anymore!

Me: what are you saying?

Her: Pack all your clothes tomorrow I'm coming to fetch you, you will come and permanently live with me la ejozi.
That was shocking! I didn't expect to go to Jozi soo soon and especially not like this.

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 8 BROKEN SOUL

I agreed to the offer of going to live with my sister, it's time i start living for me, it's time i take care of me and do things that make me happy. I have to discover myself and do things for Me because all my life I've been taking care of my mother and stuck in this life of poverty.

I called Lindo it was around 18:00 and asked if his Still around and he said he left at around 16:00 that was a bummer because i really wanted to see him before i left.

I sat there thinking to myself how beautiful life will be at jozi and what i could achieve, with my sister's help i can go to a college and take classes where they gonna train me to be a chef. I won't lie i was very excited that at Last my dream was gonna come true, i even had a bit of tears falling down. At 20:00 i waked back home and my mother was sitting on the bed coughing with a bucket on the side where she keeps on spitting.

Luzuko was not around anymore. I ignored her and started preparing my mattress to sleep. I put on my Pjs and slept after doing alot of thinking about Jozi. Sleeping was hard especially with my mother coughing at a certain point she was crying and praying asking God to take her life because she cannot do this anymore, i won't lie hearing my mother cry like that really did something to me,my heart wanted me to get up and get her everything that she needed but my anger prevented me from doing

SO.....

I woke up in the morning at 5am, changed my Pjs and went to fetch water from the dam. I came back prepared the fire and boiled water. My mom was sleeping because of the lot of coughing that kept her awake all night. I poured the water In the basin when it was warm and bath. I wore a simple outfit, a Jean, T-shirt, and Sandals. at 8am i went to buy bread and baked beans at the shop then came back. I Heat the beans up and dished up for my mom. I woke her up to eat and She was in a very bad state she refused to eat.

Me: but you have to eat mama

Her: I'm not hungry

Her voice was scratchy. I looked over to the bucket and it had blood as if like she was coughing up blood. My sister called and told me that she was on her way. I started packing my clothes. My mom noticed.

Mama: Where are you going?

Me: I'm going too..

I really didn't know how to tell her this, but I'm just gonna say it anyway.

Me: I'm going to stay with Fanny for a while.

Her: eGoli?

Me: Yes she's coming to fetch me.

She kept quiet for a while, i didn't know what she was thinking.

Her: i never wanted you to associate yourself with Fanny, if you ever had to leave home i wanted you to leave and be independent.

Me: Sometimes things don't go the way that we want them to go

Her: Are you leaving because of what happened between us?

I didn't say anything.

Her: Bennice my child don't let anger drive you into making rash decisions.

Me: It's not about that mama, it's just that i need to do things for Me now. I need to live for me, I've taken care of you for quiet a long time.

Her: i wouldn't have a problem with you leaving if you were leaving according to your own will, but if Fanny is involved i am worried what if she turns you to be like her?

I understand her fears, but i know my sister wouldn't let me get into this prostitution business she is protective when it comes to me.

Me: i won't be a prostitute mama.

I was serious about that, i was never gonna be a prostitute.

My mom was starting to tear up.

Her: i know that you can never take care of me for the rest of your life and i can't be selfish and say don't go, you have a life of your own to live but my wishes was not for you to leave like this,i don't know what I'm gonna do without you Nissi, whose gonna fetch me water, cook for me and all those things.

My tears were close to falling but i tried to hold them back,i felt deep down that this was not the right way to leave especially when my mom needs me.

I couldn't be around her anymore i took my bag and started walking out with her calling my name and crying. I walked straight to the supermarket while i was busy crying. I got there and i was relieved to see that Lindo was there, as soon as he saw me and saw that I was crying he came to me and hugged me very tight without saying anything and i cried uncontrollably that i even got hiccups. After crying like that Lindo and i went out of the supermarket and stood outside,while he was still holding me in his arms.

Him: What happened?

Me: I'm leaving today, ngiya eGoli (I'm going to jhb)

Him: Ain't you supposed to be excited about that? I mean weren't you telling me that you can't wait to go to Johannesburg?

I nodded my head, with tears still falling.

Him: So yini inkinga (what's the problem)

Me: i just feel bad about leaving my mother alone especially because she's sick and needs me feels soo wrong

Him: if that's how you feel, then why are you leaving?

Me: My sister says me taking care of my mom is wrong.

Him: does it seem wrong to you?

Me: i really don't know..

Him: Do what you think is right for you. Make a decision that you won't regret.

I really didn't know what to do. My heart wanted me to go back to my mother but Anger was saying something else. Plus i need to go and do something for myself and stand on my own because my mom won't be around forever and what am i gonna do when she's gone?

I sat with Lindo on the stoep outside and waited for my sister.

Lindo: at least we still gonna see each other, only a week left for me to go back to school. That was a bit good to hear.

Him: You can visit me in my flat

Me: You have a flat?

Him: Yes and i live alone.

Lindokuhle came from a well financial stable family, his father owned a couple of supermarkets and his mother is a teacher.

My sister called me at 13:00 that she just got off the highway and that she will be at home in no time. I told her that im at the supermarket and she said okay. After a few minutes i saw her approaching us, she was alone.

I stood up and hugged her,she hugged me back and greeted Lindo.

Her: i thought you'll be at home

Me: the environment there is not so good

Her: Okay, are you ready to go?

Me: Yes i am.

She took my bag while I hugged Lindo and kissed him goodbye.

Fanny: Stwetla you soo rude why ain't you introducing me to your bf?

Lindo looked at me.

Him: Stwetla?

Me: Please don't go there..

My sister extended her hand to give Lindo a handshake.

Fanny: I'm fanny, Nissi's sister.

Him: I'm Lindokuhle and it's nice to meet you.

Fanny: So you the guy who stole my little sister's heart?

He smiled and looked down, with his hands in his pockets.

Me: Fanny..

Fanny:What? I wanna know my brother in law hau.

My sister mara she's too forward.

Fanny: i hope you haven't broke her virginity.

I started pushing her, she was embarrassing me.

Her: It's just a question

Me: one that's not your business.

She put her hand around my shoulders and we went to catch a taxi.

Me: Are we gonna make it in time?

Her: my boyfriend is waiting for us at town, i couldn't bring him hear uyabona Kunjani (you can see how it's like)

We got a taxi and made our way to town. I was sitting there thinking of my mother. This was it, i have totally left my old life at witbank, I'm starting a new life, was very scary but exciting at the same time.

We got to town and Fanny called her bf.

Her: so are you ready to see Johannesburg?

I smiled

Me: a bit

Her: don't worry you going to live an exciting life there, you going to enjoy uzobona (you'll see)

After some time of waiting for the bf i saw a black hummer making its way to us and it stopped close to us. A man came out and he was wearing white pants, with a long T-shirt that reached almost to his feet and black men sandals with a small hat that looked like them Muslim hats and he was carrying a small stick that looked like a knobkirrie and it had Gold and silver chains around it. He looked old though as if like he was in his early 40s and was very dark in colour. Fanny hugged and kissed him.

Fanny: Nissi this is my bf Gao, and Gao this is my little sister Nissi, the one I told you about that she's gonna live with us.

He smiled and gave me a handshake.

Him: It's nice to know you.

His accent was hella weird and his English was not that good.

We went to his car, i sat at the back while Fanny and her Gao sat at the front and they was holding hands while he was driving. They was busy talking and i was on WhatsApp with my man. We drove for a very long time and made it to eJozi late but not that late because it wasn't dark yet. I was astonished by how it looked, wasn't too beautiful but it looked busy and sophisticated, it was very busy i have never seen soo many people before. I looked around while i was in the car through the car window and busy saying "wow". We drove up to this beautiful house in a beautiful neighbourhood. We got out of the car and Gao said he has to go somewhere so he didn't go inside the house with us. We got inside the house and it was a very beautiful house shame i don't wanna lie, was small and beautiful. Fanny showed me to my bedroom and i fell in love with it instantly.

Had a big Tv on the wall. I put my bag down.

Me: Your house is very beautiful

She smiled while looking at me.

Her: i know hey, and this is gonna be your home from now on.

I smiled back at her.

Me: Thank you sis.

Her: That's what sisters are for.

She came to hug me.

Me: And your boyfriend looks Friendly

Her: He is, he might look scary physically but on the inside his a big baby.

I giggled.

Me: Uhm i don't wanna be rude or something but is he from here?

Her: No his from Nigeria, in Lagos

Me: Wow that's nice.

I've always heard that Nigerians are rich.

Me: His rich neh?

Her: You can say that, he has been good to me he gave me this life.

I looked around the room..

Her: Let's go out.

Me: out?

Her: Yes have you ever eaten pizza before?

Me: Nope but i heard it's nice

She chuckled.

Her: Then let's go get you pizza.

We walked out and she called someone to come and fetch us.

A black kia optima came to fetch us driven by some guy whom my sister told me that it's her "Private chauffeur".

We got to a restaurant called Debonairs pizza and i sat down while my sister ordered.

After a few minutes our pizzas came she had ordered two boxes of pizzas. We ate there while i had her take pictures of me eating pizza. When we were done we went home.

When we got home she said i must keep her company while she baths and she had a bathroom in her bedroom. She left the bathroom door open while we talked and i was busy going around her room snooping around, she couldn't see me because she had some green vegetable on her eyes. I sprayed her perfume on me and tried on her make up. I went to her wardrobe and went through her things. I went through her underwears busy laughing because they were all G-strings. I tried closing the drawer but something was blocking it so i took it out and ran my hand there to see what was blocking and my hand came back with a bottle of pills. I read and it was the same pills mom was taking, my sister was taking ARVs i dropped the bottle on the floor in amazement! What the heck? Is my sister HIV+ too? What is this curse of a disease doing in my family mara?

PART 9 BROKEN SOUL

I quickly put back the pills and the drawer. I sat on the bed busy thinking, This was just not good my sister is dying too. She came out of the bathroom to dress up and i was just starring at her.

Her: the way you starring at me, I'm scared that you might be lesbian

I didn't hear what she said.

Her: Stwetla!

Me: huh?

Her: What are you thinking about?

Me: Nothing much

Her: So how are you finding jhb so far?

Me: It's only been my first day, and we only had pizza.

She laughed.

Her: don't worry we still have a lot to do.

After she got dressed, we went to watch TV and ate snacks. Gao got in while we were still wtv.

Gao: Fan can i talk to you in private?

Fan: Ya sure.

They went to the kitchen, and i tip toed to the door to listen to their conversation.

Gao: that Friend of mine Jito his coming to jhb for a few weeks, he wants to handle some business, and his looking to have some fun so i want you to, you know.

Fanny: How much is he paying?

Him: it will depend on how much fun he will have with you, so I'm trusting in you to make us some real money.

Fan: OK i will

He smiled and kissed her. That was disgusting, how can he sell Fanny like that especially since they're dating. I quickly went to sit down and they came in the lounge.

Fan: did i miss anything on the movie?

Me: No you didn't miss much

Her: What happened, did they find the killer?

Me: i don't think so.

Her: Okay.

She was glued to the Tv and i was looking at her busy thinking, i don't wanna end up like my mother and sister, i wanna be a chef then get married to my Lindo and have a better life than that of my mom and sister. After the movie we went to sleep.

A week had passed now since I've been living with my sister and life had been Good. I was worried about my mother though but unfortunately i had no one to Contact on the other side. It was a Saturday morning when Fanny and i were preparing to go shopping she needed a dress and shoes for her date with "Jito". My phone rang when we were about to walk out and it was Lindo, i answered my phone while smiling.

Me: hello stranger

He laughed a little

Him: And Hello stranger

Me: You said you gonna call me everyday and you didn't, what's up with that?

Him: Sorry love i was busy

Me: busy with what?

Him: Just things nje, anyway i called to tell you that I'm here in jhb i arrived yesterday and i would like to see you.

Me: Really?

Him: Yes so woza (come)

Me: I'm on my way..

Him: ill sms you the address.

I hung up the phone and looked at my sister.

Here: Yini? (what)

Me: Lindo is around and i would like to see him

Her: haa! You dropping me for your bf.

Me: I'm sorry but i missed him alot

Her: fine you can go.

I screamed in happiness and hugged her. The chauffeur came and we went in the car, they dropped me off at Lindo's flat.

Fanny: have fun and use a condom don't want you falling pregnant.

I laughed and closed the car door, then they drove off. I WhatsApped Lindo that im at the gate and he came to fetch me. I was happy to see him i hugged him for a few minutes. He held my hand and we walked to his flat. The flats where beautiful and looked expensive. We got to his flat and went in, was a bachelor flat looked beautiful though and a bit small.

Me: Your flat looks beautiful

Him: Thanks

Me: How much you paying?

Him: R3000 a month.

Me: that's quite expensive

Him: it is..

I sat on his bed.

Him: What do you wanna do?

Me: i don't know because the weather looks horrible, it looks like it's about to rain.

Him: Ya i weather yase jozi le.

Me: we can just chill in the flat and talk

Him: Okay let's go get something to eat first.

We went out to his car and drove off to chisa nyama.

I got chicken and chips and he got the same. We went to shoprite bought rolls, cool drink, snacks and magnum minis. We drove back to his flat and it was now raining, we got in and just chilled indoors eating and watching movies. That went on until we didn't have anything to watch anymore so we just chilled in bed, it was now in the afternoon.

He was playing with my fingers and i was laying on his chest.

Him: i enjoy every minute and hour i spend with you.

Me: same here.

Him: I love you Nissi

I lifted up my head and looked at him.

Me: You do?

Him: Yes i do

Me: i love you too.

He smiled and kissed me. The kiss went on and on until i felt a bit horny, then i broke the kiss.

Him: What's wrong?

Me: Nothing.

Him: Are you sure?

Me: Yes

He kissed me again then after got ontop of me. Things were getting a bit out of control now he took off my t-shirt and kissed me on my neck went down to my breasts and sucked my nipples i was spiralling out of control. He went back up and pecked my lips.

Him: Are you sure you wanna do this?

Me: i don't know I'm scared.

Him: We can stop if you feel like you not ready..

He knew that i was a Virgin, i told him.

I smiled at him.

Me: It's okay

He smiled back at me then kissed me again. Our foreplay went on for a couple of minutes, kissing and caressing my body which he finished it off by Rubbing his penis at the entrance of my Vagina while kissing me deeply all i wanted was for him to enter me already. He stopped then went to get a condom put it on and we continued with the foreplay. He entered me when I was very wet but i still felt a bit of pain. He was trying to be as gentle as possible but i still felt an excruciating pain all i wanted was for him to finish. He went on and on starting of slow then increased the pace i was screaming like crazy when he increased the pace. After a few minutes he came then got off Me. I cannot believe that i Lost my Vaginity but it was worth it because i didn't lose it to just any random guy.

I looked at the time it was 17:30

And a couple of missed calls from my sister.

Me: i have to go before my sister sends out a search party for me.

When i tried to get off bed Lindo pulled me back to him again.

Him: Why don't you spend a night here?

Me: Ahhh you want my sister to kill me.

Him: You 21, you legal enough to make your own decisions

I laughed. He kissed me on my neck.

Him: Please just one night.

Me: fine then.

I enjoyed spending the night at Lindo's place, we had sex a couple of times, we had pillow talks, took a shower together i swear i never felt like this before i was in the 7th cloud of happiness. I woke up in the morning with Lindo laying next to me and starring at me all smiling.

Me: What?

Him: I'm just admiring what's mine.

I smiled too.

Him: What Time are you leaving?

Me: think i have to leave now before my sister really kills me.

I woke up and showered i put on his addidas track pants and his vest, then left my clothes in his washer. He drove me to my sister's place and it was sad when he went back. I got in and my sister was pacing up and down.

Her: uphumaphi wena? (where you coming from)

I didn't know what to say

Her: I've been calling you

Me: Sorry

She looked at me and noticed that i wasn't wearing my clothes.

She smiled

Her: I'm not even gonna ask what happened

I smiled back.

Her: I'm not saying don't spend time with your bf mara please call me and tell me where you are..

Me: Okay i will next time.

Aike shame it was hard living without Lindokuhle i wanted him next to me every minute and every second that i packed up a few of my clothes and went to visit him, my sister allowed me. Lindo came to fetch me and i stayed with him for a week or so and my love

for him grew stronger and stronger everyday. The next coming weekend Lindo was going to witbank to sort out a few things i asked to go with him because i wanted to see my mother and he agreed. We drove to Duva-park first and i was scared for him to find out where i live but if he loves me then he will accept me and where i come from. We got home and i was scared shame but it's time that he meets my mom. We got out of the car and went in, i was surprised to see a couple of people there looking all somehow with Zuko crying, they just looked at me like they were disgusted by me. I went up to Zuko but she ignored me i went to Sis'Mazet my choir director

Me: What's going on Sis'Mazet.

She shook her head

Me: Please tell me

Her: It's your mom she passed on

Me: What! When did this happen?

Her: we not sure but Zuko found her yesterday dead and it was cruel how she died Sis'Mazet was crying now.

Her: we suspect that she died a couple of weeks ago or so because the house was smelling when Zuko found her, she died alone If it wasn't for Zuko she probably would've gotten rotten here with no one knowing.

I went inside the house vele it was a bit smelling but my mom was not around i Sat on her bed not believing what I've heard. Zuko came to me.

Her: here's a letter that she wrote for you.

I took the letter and read it.

"Nissi my child if you receive this letter then that means i am no more. First and foremost i want you to know that i love you and I'm sorry about what i did to you and i pray that one day you find it in your heart to forgive me. I am very proud of you and the person that you are my child, always remain like that and don't let the world endeavour you. You are alone now and i pray that God protects you and blesses you for all that you have done for me, and please watch out for Fanny don't allow her to lead you Astray. If you ever find yourself lost kneel down and pray God will show you the way. I love you my child and i hope we'll meet again one day"

PART 10 BROKEN SOUL

I put the letter down, i was very emotional, very heartbroken that my mother passed on while things between me and her where tense. I wish that i could've looked beyond my anger and fixed things between me and her. She died alone I can imagine the struggle she went through alone, i can imagine how much she needed me, i thought of that while crying. Lindo came in and sat next to me.

Me: She died alone. She needed me and i was not here.

Him: I'm sorry.

Me: i wish i could go back in time to fix things with her and now she died without knowing if I forgave her or not.

Lindo picked up the letter and read it.

Him: at least you know that she loves you.

Me: That doesn't make the situation better. I'm alone now in this world.

He hugged me.

Him: You not alone, you got me.

I cried on his shoulder. After some time Zuko came in with Sis'Mazet, and Lindo went out said I'm gonna get him in the car.

Me: i wish that i could've been here to spend more time with her before she left this world.

Zuko: She really wanted you here. The only thing she talked about in the past few days before she died was you. She was always asking me when you gonna come back.

I couldn't stop the tears from falling.

Zuko: i also blame myself because i didn't come to see her for 2 weeks. I shouldve came to visit her and checked up on her.

Sis'Mazet: there's no point in busy going back and forth about this. What we need to think about now is where too from here.

What was i gonna do without my mother.

Sis'Mazet: After this tragedy Nissi know that you not alone we here to support you, and we glad that you home to discuss the funeral arrangements.

Me: i have to call my sister first and let her know About this.

I took my phone and went outside to call my sister.

Her: Are you enjoying the time you spending with your bf?

I started crying.

Fan: what's wrong Nissi?

Me: It's mom, she has passed on.

Her: What Are you talking about mom has passed on? Where are you!

Me: I'm at witbank

Her: What are you doing at witbank? You supposed to be here in Jozi

Me: i came with my bf he was coming to fix some staff here.

Her: Why didn't you..

Me: Fanny this is no time to be fighting okay, we need to be thinking about burying mom!

Her: burying her? With what money?

Me: Well you can ask your bf to help us.

Fan: my bf Is not an atm! Mom deserved to die okay and now she deserves to rot wherever she is!

Me: Fanny she's our mother!

Fan: a mother who put us through hell! I'm even thinking that she should have her body burnt in a bush.

Me: i cannot believe you right now!

Fanny: mom died because of her sins! Her evilness finally caught up with her, and what you need to do is to come back to Jozi and be done with that life Nissi!

She hung up after saying that, and i went back to the house.

Sis'Mazet: What did she say?

Me: She.. She doesn't wanna be a part of it, she wants nothing to do with this,she's saying mom must be burnt.

Sis'Mazet: How can she say that! This is her mother we talking about, kanti unjani na lomntwana (what kind of a child is she)

Zuko sent out an evil laugh.

Zuko: Fanny has a heart of the devil, sometimes i think that she's the devil!

Me: Hey don't talk about my sister like that!

Zuko: and you still defending her!

Me: I'm not gonna sit here and let you insult my sister like that! My mom was not perfect okay she did alot of evil things, she was heartless and Fanny is just reacting to the pain that my mom put her through and i don't blame her!

Zuko: when are you gonna see fanny for who she really is!

I stood up.

Me: I'm not gonna sit here and have you insult my sister like this!

I said that while walking out.

Sis'Mazet: manje Uyaphi? (where are you going)

Me: to where i belong!

I waked out and got into Lindo's car then he drove off. Not much was said in the car. He went to handle whatever business he had to handle then after we drove back to jhb. We arrived at 19:00 i went to get my clothes at his flat then after he drove me to my sister's place. I found my sister all dressed up as if like she's going somewhere.

She just looked at me then came up to hug me.

Her: I'm sorry about mom.

Me: i can't believe that she's gone.

Her: i know you think that im evil or something but stwetla mom got what she deserved. What she put us through still haunts me even today! Be happy you free now to live your life.

I flashed a fake smile.

Her: Now go and prepare yourself we going out tonight to have some fun.

She borrowed me one of her dresses she was size 30 and i was 32 so it was too tight and my boobs were hella big so my cleavage was all out there. I wasn't big on heels so i wore black gladiator sandals the dress was black with a Gold belt. My hair was getting there wasn't that short anymore so i combed it nicely and my sister did my make up and borrowed me her clutch bag. We walked out to the car and drove off to some jazz lounge. We sat on some couch and my sister got us a bucket with ice and there were hunter's dry dumpies in there. I never touched alcohol so this was my first time.

Me: Are we waiting for someone?

Her: Ya Gao and his friend Jito will be joining us.

Me: Okay.

I was busy taking a sip of the hunter's dry didn't taste good at all or maybe it was because I wasn't familiar with Alcohol. My sister had gotten through 3 dumpies while i was still on my first. Gao came in with his friend they were wearing those Nigerian clothes of theirs and the friend looked older too. They gave us hugs and we all went to get a table.

This Jito of a person was busy winking at me and also starring at my cleavage that was making me uncomfortable.

Fanny: Jito when are you going back to Lagos?

Jito: i don't live there anymore

Fanny: Really?

Jito: Yes i bought me a big house at Cape Town.

Fanny: That's nice so for how long are you gonna be in jhb for?

He looked at me.

Him: i don't know but I'm planning to stay here for some couple of days.

I wasn't drinking anymore the alcohol tasted horrible so i got me some coke.

Gao: Nissi you don't look like you enjoying yourself

Me: i am

Gao: i don't think so, we can go somewhere else if you want

Fanny: i also think we should go somewhere else because it's boring here.

We went to Gao's hummer, me and Jito sat at the back while Gao and Fanny sat at the front. While we were driving to wherever we were going, Jito was busy running his

hands on my thighs and attempted to touch my breasts and i kept on pushing his hand away. My sister and Gao couldn't see what was going on because it was dark in the car.

All along i was busy praying that when are we arriving because i really didn't like what was happening, was making me very uncomfortable and very scared. We got to another club and at least it was hip and happening there. My sister said we should go and dance while Gao and Jito were sitting in the vip section. I was happy that she said that because this Jito guy was making me uncomfortable.

Me: How did you guys meet this Jito guy?

Her: Agh his one of Gao's rich friends.

We danced till we got tired then we went to sit down. Gao decided to go get more Alcohol and my sister went to the bathroom leaving me with Jito and he got closer to me, putting his arm around my shoulders.

Me: i was waiting for us to be alone so that we can talk.

I looked away he was disgusting Me.

Him: i like you alot, and i wanna make you my Queen. You'll get everything you want I'm rich baby.

Me: I'm not a prostitute

Him: I'm not saying be a prostitute, I'm saying be mine.

He said that while touching my breasts.

Me: Please don't do that!

He forced his hand in between my thighs and i was trying to get it off.

Him: Stop being like that! Do you know how much money you can make.

He was really getting too touchy and it was hard pushing him off because he was strong i was now crying.

Him: Come on loosen up a bit!

Me: Leave me alone!

He continued busy squeezing my breasts and forcing to kiss me then we heard a voice saying "leave her alone" it was Gao. Jito left me alone.

Gao: i think you should leave

Jito: What?

Gao: This is my girlfriend's little sister can't you see that she's young?

Jito: i was just trying to have fun brother.

Gao: go have fun somewhere else! You pervert! If i see you anywhere near her or my gf i will kill you brother!

Jito didn't say no more he stood up and left. Gao sat next to me while i was still crying.

Gao: I'm really sorry about what happened, i shouldve known that Gao is nothing but a pervert that is into little girls!

Me: It's okay

My sister came back, and noticed that i was crying

Her: What's wrong Nissi?

Gao: Jito was busy sexually harassing her!

Fanny: What the hell! Omg are you okay Nissi?

Me: I'm fine

Gao: i never wanna see him again or else i will kill him!

I didn't wanna club anymore so i just asked them to drop me off at Lindo's flat while they go on about with their clubbing. Lindo was still awake it was 23:00. He was happy to see me and i was happy to see him. We chilled in bed all talking and Laughing then we kissed and kissing led to us having sex,we had 2 rounds then slept.

I woke up in the morning with a smile on my face as always, Lindo was dressing up looked like he just finished showering.

Me: Morning handsome

Him: Hey..

That was cold, he didn't look at me or smile at me.

Me: Where are you going?

Him: out.

Me: should i come along?

Him: No

Me: hau what's wrong, you look like you in a bad mood.

Him: i don't know how to tell you this..

He sat to next to me.

Me: What's wrong love?

Him: It's over.

I laughed.

Me: What do you mean it's over?

Him: It was Good while it lasted Nissi but i got what i wanted and i don't want you anymore. So please dress up and leave. I never wanna see you again and please don't ever call me we through!

And he wasn't playing, he looked very serious!

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 11 BROKEN SOUL

I couldn't believe my ears, what was Lindo saying to me?

Me: What are you saying to me?

Him: I'm saying get up and go!

Me: How could you do this to me? I thought you loved me.

He laughed hysterically.

Him: You really thought that i loved you?

I looked at him with a bit of tears in my eyes.

Him: You poor thing. Nissi there's no better way to say this, so I'm just gonna go ahead and say it. I don't love you, never have and never will. Actually no one is ever gonna love you. You are not beautiful you just a yellow bone with big disgusting boobs you ugly as hell!

My word, was he saying all this hurtful things to me?

Him: do yourself and the world a favour by committing suicide because there's no one whose ever gonna love you, not even a nyoape guy can love you or be attracted to you, that's how disgusting you are.

It was as if like i was back in primary and high school again.

Him: did you even see where you from? I thought i was gonna vomit that's why I couldn't stay there for long. You disgusting Nissi, your body is disgusting actually you disgusting as a person! Do you know the girls i date? You'll faint if you could see them. I couldn't control the tears anymore.

Him: Your mom shouldve aborted you because you have no influence in the land of the living!

And you don't have a purpose in life!

What has gotten into Lindokuhle mara?

Me: Then why did you sleep with me?

Him: because of some stupid bet i did with some homie of mine.

I got out of his bed and dressed up. He was standing behind me, i turned around and slapped him very hard, and Walked out crying while he was laughing. I walked to my sister's place which was a bit far my heart was broken, i needed my mom she would know how to comfort me. I stopped halfway and cried my lungs out, i didn't care about people that where passing and looking at me. I went down on the ground all crying, why did Lindo say all those things to me mara? Especially while i was still in pain of losing my mom. I cried and cried until some 2 guys came to me.

Guy1: excuse me are you okay?

He helped me get up, and when i was up on my feet i pushed him.

Me: Leave me alone!!!! You all the same! Men are dogs you hear me? All of you are dogs!

Guy2: we were trying to help you

I was making noise and Attracting eyes.

Me: Help me with what? By fuckin me then telling me that im not beautiful?

Guy1: What are you talking about?

Me: just leave me alone!

I continued walking people probably thought that i was high on drugs or something, because my dress was a bit dirty from Laying on that ground.

I walked up to some tavern but unfortunately i didn't have enough money to buy alcohol. I Walked till i got to my sister's place and there was no one when i got inside. I went to the bathroom and bathe then looked at my body through the mirror, was it true? Am i not an attractive person? i felt a sharp pain through my heart. I sat down with tears and thinking about when my mother needed me the most and i wasn't there, and now the tables have turned i need her right now, i needed her more than i needed her before and she was not here. I cried while saying the words "Mama". I was laying on the floor of my bedroom, i felt like my mom should come to fetch me and take me to

wherever she is or God just taking my life. I went to the kitchen and searched for alcohol, there has to be alcohol somewhere i searched and searched till i found a whiskey and just gulped it. It tasted horrible mara i had no choice I've seen people running to alcohol for comfort so I'm doing the same. I took a kitchen knife and put it on the counter busy looking at it, yes i was gonna kill myself. I sat there while drinking the whiskey and looking at the knife, and crying. My sister came in with Gao she had plastics i figured she had been shopping. She just looked at me and came to me.

Her: Nissi what's wrong?

I shook my head while crying.

Gao: I'll be in the bedroom.

Fanny nodded her head and he went.

Her: What happened sthandwa sami?

Me: It's Lindo

Her: What did he do?

Me: He dumped me Fan, after taking my virginity he dumped me and told me that im ugly and that he doesn't love me, i was just a bet.

Fan: What!! He said that?

Me: Yes!

Fan: Ohh hell no! Gao! Gao! Gao!

Me: What you calling him for?

Her: No we need to teach this boy a lesson, he can't get away with this!

Gao came to us after like 5min.

Gao: What's wrong?

Fan told him what happened and i saw him getting uneasy.

Him: You still remember the way to his place?

I nodded my head yes.

Gao: Let's go.

I was a bit scared, what was Gao gonna do him.

We all went to his car and drove up to his flat. My sister told Gao to stay in the car she's gonna handle the situation. Gao said okay and he stayed in the car.

We went up to his flat and my sister was banging on the door until Lindo opened. My sister pushed him back and we went inside. Nigga has no shams he already had another bitch in his bed she was half naked and he was shirtless.

Fan: Who the hell do you think you are? Huh? Playing my sister like that!

My sister was busy pushing him.

Girl: Babe who are this people?

Fan: Your worst nightmare!

Lindo: What you expect me to do? Date your sister while i have no feelings towards her? That's crazy! I'm zero attracted to her!

Fan: Then why did you date her? And filled her head with lies

Lindo: because she was just a bet and nothing more! Look at Nissi and then look at my gf huuuuge difference!

My sister looked at me, then looked at the girl after that she started walking away but then stopped and turned around, then went and punched Lindo very hard, that he took a few steps back my jaw dropped. Lindo came with full force and punched my sister i thought fanny saw stars because that punch was hard. Fan looked around went to the Fridge took out a bottle and broke it then went to Lindo she stabbed him on his shoulder, i swear My sister is crazy! Lindo didn't attack back he took a few steps back till he got to The bed and sat down, trying to get the bottle of his shoulder. The girl was all screaming.

Girl: Oh my word are you crazy?

Fan: I'm not crazy, I'm local! And That's what he gets for messing with my sister!

Nobody messes with my baby sister and then gets away with it.

My sister was bleeding through her nose she went to clean the blood at the bathroom, i swear Fan is crazy who attacks someone then after goes and clean them self in that person's bathroom?

Lindo: Your sister did the biggest mistake of her life! You gonna pay for this Nissi do you hear me?

Fan came back and we went out, she was holding a tissue against her nose. We went to the hummer and Gao was shocked when he saw Fanny's nose.

Him: What happened?

Fanny: that stupid boy punched me!

Gao: i think i should go and teach him a lesson.

when Gao was going out my sister held his hand

Fan: Leave him I've dealt with him.

We drove to the hospital first. And Lindo had broken Fan's nose. They gave her pain killers and put something like a gauze on her nose, and we drove back to the house. We got to The house Fan came with a tub of Ice cream and spoons we sat on the couch and ate while Gao went to run some errands.

Me: i can't believe you stabbed him.

Fan: His lucky i didn't unite him with his Ancestors.

We both laughed. My phone beeped after a few minutes while we were still eating Ice cream and talking. I checked and it was a WhatsApp message from Lindo i haven't

deleted his number yet i wonder what he wanted. I checked what he was on about and what i saw made me drop my phone and tremble with fear. Nigga took a video of us having sex, he fucken recorded the whole thing i wondered how because i didn't see him holding his phone while we were having sex

PART 12 BROKEN SOUL

I wonder what Lindo thinks that his gonna achieve by doing such thing.

Fan: Stwetla are you alright?

I was trembling and in disbelief of what I just saw. My sister got the phone and looked at it then she also couldn't believe what she saw.

Fan: Is this boy asking for death?

Me: This cannot be!

Fan: Stwetla couldn't you see him that he was recording you?

Me: No there was no phone or anything I'm still wondering how he did it.

My phone rang while my sister and i were still talking like that. I didn't answer, then he sent me a message saying "you better answer if you know what's good for you". He called again and i answered.

Me: What?

Him: You in no position to be rude or you want the whole world to see how much of a bitch you are?

Me: What do you want from me?

Him: Tell that thing that's called your sister to come and Apologize because if she doesn't you gonna be the next Kim kardashian!

He hung up after saying that i ain't even know who Kim kardashian is. I looked at Fanny.

Fanny: What you looking at me like that for?

Me: He wants you to apologise

Her: he must be high on weed or something! I'm not apologising.

Me: Fan he said that if you don't apologise I'm gonna be the next Kim kardashian

Her: that's good because we gonna be rich of your sex tape then.

Me: Fan Please quit joking

Her: I'm not joking.

Me: You just gonna say I'm sorry how hard can that compared to my reputation?

Her: Okay I'll apologise

I called Lindo.

Him: yes?

Me: My sister is ready to apologise I'll just give her the phone

Him: Are you crazy or you just playing dumb?

Me: didn't you want her to apologise?

Him: i do but I want her to apologise face to face, i give yall an hour!

I wish that Lindo could just drop dead and die!

Me: He wants us to go to his place.

Fan: Stwetla mara where did you get this guy?

Me: I'm also asking myself the same thing.

We went out and Fan called the car to come and pick us up. It came after some time, we got in and drove to Lindo's flat. We got there and knocked at his door, and he opened.

Him: It's about damn time!

We went inside. He was alone this time around.

That was an awkward moment because no one said anything until my sister broke the silence.

Fan: I am here to apologise for stabbing you even though you were a jerk!

Me: Fan

Fan: It's true! I'm not even sure why I'm here. He should be the one apologising not i.

Lindo: let me just release the tape then.

Me: Fanny Please be serious this is my reputation we talking about.

Fan: Okay i am sorry for stabbing you.

Lindo: i ain't seeing you kneeling down.

Fan: You not God.

Him: You really wanna do this to your sister?

Fan looked at me and i gave her a puppy dog face. She didn't protest anymore she went down on her knees.

Lindo: and i want you to say a heartwarming apology! Say it like you mean it!

Fan: i am soo sorry about acting like a hooligan and stabbing you like that! I was very wrong please forgive me.

I know that my sister is probably dying inside.

Lindo looked at her.

Fan: Happy?

Lindo: No but i guess that will do.

Fan stood up.

Fan: Let's go Nissi before I stab someone again because my hand is itching.

We walked to the door.

Lindo: Nissi is staying.

We stopped and looked at him.

Him: Fanny you can go, Nissi will get you at home she knows her way home.

Fan: If you think that im gonna leave my sister here with you then you are crazy!

Him: I'm not asking you, I'm telling you.

Fan: I apologized, i did everything you asked me to do what do you still want from us?

Lindo looked at me as if like he was undressing me with his eyes.

Him: We still have some unfinished business.

Fan: If you think..

Me: It's fine fanny you can go.

Fan: No stwetla..

Me: It's okay Fan you can go.

Fan: Alright then, call me if he gets crazy you know I'm local!

She hugged me and kissed me on my cheek, then walked out.

Lindo looked at me all biting his lower lip.

Him: Come here.

I went close to him.

Him: a little closer than that.

I went closer and he put his hand around my waist.

Him: i want to have some fun with you.

He said that while kissing my breasts. This nigga is unbelievable.

Me: You bash me out that im ugly and all that then now you wanna fuck me Wow!

Him: Eyy Pussy is pussy!

He kissed me, i swear i felt like biting his tongue! We kissed until we ended up in bed and we had sex, all along i was busy looking around and asking myself where did he hide whatever it that he was recording with. After a few minutes we were done and

thankfully we used condoms, i got out off bed and started dressing up.

Him: And where are you going?

Me: home

Him: We not done here!

Me: i believe we are.

Him: No we gonna be done when i say so!

I continued dressing up.

Him: You really wanna be famous?

Me: Please do it! I'm tired of your threats!

Him: I'm really gonna do it!

Me: do it and see if I care!

I didn't mean that, i was very scared but then his been all talk but no action so i don't think his gonna do it.

He stood up and took his phone.

Him: im gonna distribute it on Facebook then on other social networks. This is gonna have a permanent effect on your reputation let's see you try to get a job after everyone has seen it!

Okay maybe he has a point!

Me: Why you doing this to me?

Him: because i enjoy it! Now get your ugly ass back in bed! And stop pissing me off.

I had no choice, i got back in bed. Lindo and i had sex throughout the whole day, i was tired i was in pain i didn't want none anymore. After all that ordeal we chilled and watched tv until at night then Nigga had the nerve to kick me out at 22:00 pm. I went out to stand at the gate and called my sister to fetch me, but instead of my sister fetching me it was Gao. He was with 3 other men that looked scary and he did not look happy himself

Him: is that Bastard still in his flat?

I nodded yes. He started walking to Lindo's flat with his men.

Me: What are you going to do?

Him: something that i shouldve done long time ago.

I followed them but then he told me to stand outside. He didn't even knock one of his men busted the door and they went in. I was standing there asking myself what's happening. They had been there for quite a long time then after i heard things breaking and Lindo screaming. My heart was beating fast, what were they doing to him?

PART 13 BROKEN SOUL

I stood there not knowing what was going on. I know Lindo is a jerk and all that but I don't think he deserves to die like that. Gao and his Men came out after some few minutes.

Gao: Let's go home

Me: did you kill him?

Him: No but he won't bother you anymore.

We went to his car and drove home.

Gao was right days and weeks passed without Lindo bothering me, i seriously didn't know what Gao said or did to him that scared him off like that. Gao came to the kitchen one morning and i was making breakfast.

Gao: Morning

Me: Morning

Him: How are you

Me: I'm fine thanks and you

Him: I'm okay

Me: Since I'm making breakfast would you like something to eat?

Him: What are you making?

Me: cheese and Palony sandwich with lettuce and apple juice on the side

Him: That will do..

I made him the sandwich then poured him juice too then gave it to him

Me: dig in.

Him: Thank you.

My sister came in the kitchen all coughing she looked very sick.

Her: Good morning yall

Me: Hey.

She sat down. There was some tension between her and Gao.

Me: You don't look Good

Her: I've been having some weird cough lately.

Me: that's not good.

Her: i got some meds at the pharmacy so I'll be fine.

Gao: You not gonna be fine you need to go to the hospital.

Fan: the meds are working so I'll be okay

Gao: i don't see how you gonna be "okay" when you cough like a dog at night!

That wasn't nice to say. I was sitting there feeling uneasy about what was happening.

Fan: If it gets to you that much then I'll sleep in the guest room

Him: That's thoughtful thank you.

Fan: whatever

Me: i think that I probably should go and eat my food in the lounge

Gao: No that's not necessary, plus i wanna ask you something

I looked at him

Gao: I'll need you to accompany me tonight as my date it's the opening night of my club

I saw Fanny giving him a serious look.

Fan: i thought that i was going with you, it's only fair that i go with you I'm your gf.

Gao: You were going with me, but then you got sick so i don't want you infecting anyone

Fan: It's just a cough

Him: the last time you said it's "just a cough" it turned out to be something else

Fanny looked at me, then looked at Gao.

Her: I'll drink my medication, i really wanna go with you I have to be by your side when you open your club.

Him: Fanny I'm not gonna repeat myself you not going, and do yourself and us a favour by going to the hospital because your cough is disgusting.

He said that while standing up and looked at me.

Him: I'll come and pick you up in the afternoon so you can buy an outfit.

Then he went out. I didn't know what to say to Fan, Gao has put me in a very difficult situation.

Me: should i make you something to eat?

Her: No thanks.

Fanny was feeling a bit down.

Her: he looked at me like i disgust him.

I didn't know what to say.

Her: I've been looking forward to this opening night of his club for a couple of months now, and I'm gonna miss it, just because of a stupid cough.

Me: i won't go if you don't want me too

She put on a fake smile

Her: No you have to go. He has to show up with someone I'd prefer you go than some random bitch.. SHE stood up after saying that.

Her: I'm going to sleep.

She walked to her bedroom still coughing.

After finishing eating my breakfast i went to watch TV and waited for Gao to come pick me up and he came at around 12:00. I took my phone and we went to his car. We started off at the salon i did a long weave was black and red, then after we went to some boutique and i didn't wanna complicate my life so i just got a white jumpsuit that was short and revealing my thighs with white heels and a push up bra with a matching underwear and a bag. Gao even took me out for a manicure and a pedicure. After shopping we went out to eat at some local Nigerian restaurant. I ordered rice with chicken because that's the only food i was familiar with the rest looked totally foreign to me. Gao ordered a meal that i didn't know what was going on and we went to sit at the table.

Him: Thank you for agreeing to accompany me to the opening night of my club.

Me: I'm glad i could help.

He looked at me and smiled.

Me: What?

Him: You never really told me about what your plans are

Me: What do you mean?

Him: Your sister told me that you came here to better your life start afresh and make something of your life

Me: Yes i do wanna do that . My plans were for me to come here and study to be a chef then hopefully one day own a restaurant.

Him: Those are big plans you have there

Me: Yes they are, but unfortunately I don't see them coming true

Him: why not?

Me: i don't have money to go to college with and i have no one to help me with paying for my studies.

Him: That's sad

Me: Too much

Him: have you asked anyone to fund your studies?

Me: No but I'm hoping to ask my sister to help me and i don't see her helping me i think my course will be expensive.

Him: well then there's someone that you haven't asked.

I looked at him.

Me: Who?

Him: Me.

I looked at him all shocked with my mouth slightly open

Him: i admire women who are passionate and wanna stand on their own. So i wouldn't mind paying for your studies

Me: What? Are you serious?

Him: Yes i am, Ofcause that's if you accept my offer.

Me: i.. I don't know what to say

Him: Say Yes because Gao doesn't take no for an answer.

Me: Uhm Yes i would like for you to fund my studies.

Him: i promise to take care of you and your sister.

I smile at him. My sister and i we lucky to have Gao in our lives.

After finishing eating we went back to the house to prepare ourselves because the whole function was gonna start at 18:00. I went and bathe then put on the jumpsuit, make up and my sister curled my weave then we were done. I stood up and she looked at me.

Fan: Wow you look beautiful stwetla

Me:You think so?

Her: Yes you gonna attract alot of those Nigerians tonight especially with that cleavage. I smiled while checking myself out in the mirror, i really did look good. When i was done we went to meet Gao at the kitchen and he froze when he saw me. I waited for him to say something, but he didn't.

Fan: so what do you think Gao?

Him: She looks very beautiful, i don't even have the right words.

I smiled at him.

Me: Thank you.

Him: Are you ready to go?

Me: Yes i am.

Fanny tried to hug him goodbye but he brushed her off and took my hand then we walked out. We didn't take the hummer we took a black Mercedes benz E-class. Gao was busy starring at me In the car and that made me blush. We got to his club many people were standing outside already, and we walked up to the door and they gave him a pair of scissors and he cut off that big red ribbon at the door.

Gao: I welcome everyone to my new club "Gao's nightclub" Let's go in and have some fun.

We went in first then everyone followed while clapping their hands and cheering him up. We went to seat at some couch that was reserved for us. His club was Wow looked like he spent a lot of money to make it a success. Later we were joined by his Nigerian Friends they were also wearing those Nigerian clothes and they looked rich, they were with their girlfriends. We sat and had a couple of drinks i was drinking red square this time around which tasted a bit better. People where coming to congratulate Gao it was really nice shame and fun i was enjoying. His friends decided to show off you know how Nigerians are they made him stand up and threw money at him while he was busy turning around, then after a few seconds he asked me to join him, i refused at first but then he wasn't taking no for an answer as always that i decided to stand up and join him i mean what harm can it do? We were busy turning around in circles and they were throwing money at us with Gao's hand around my waist it was a very good experience i couldn't stop smiling.

PART 14 BROKEN SOUL

I swear i never had such fun, mingling with rich people, dancing and drinking was the best night of my life. Was a good way to let lose and forget a bit about my mother's death and Lindo breaking my heart. At around 12am Gao said we must leave, then we hugged his friends said our goodbyes and went to his car.

Me: Thank you i really had fun.

Him: I'm glad you enjoyed, i thought you were gonna be bored.

Me: Never! And your friends were fun they made my night one that im probably gonna remember for the rest of my life.

He chuckled.

Him: It's good that you enjoyed. Aren't you hungry?

Me: Are there any restaurants that are Still open at this time?

Him: Well ya it's kfc and McDonalds

Me: i think kfc will be good i miss their meat.

We drove to kfc and went in to order. I ordered Streetwise 2 with chips, a twister, and Fanta orange while Gao got their burger that comes with chips and coke. We went to sit down while waiting for our order. The staff was starring at us you can clearly see that they gossiping about us, they probably thinking his my sugar daddy or asking themselves what I'm doing with a Nigerian guy.

Our order was called up and Gao went to fetch it then came back and we ate, i took off my heels while we were eating.

Him: Are they hurting you?

Me: sort of I'm not used to heels.

Him: You should familiarise yourself with them because they look good on you.

Me: Thank you *smiling*

We ate our food then after made our way home. We got inside and the house was quiet, figured my sister was asleep. Gao hugged me good night and thanked me again for coming along with him. He went to his bedroom and i went to mine and then i heard Fan coughing in the guest room. I knocked and went in. I sat her up straight and put a pillow behind her for her to lean on.

Her: so how was it?

Me: was okay.

She looked at me

Me: Okay it was very good! I've never had soo much fun before in my life.

She started coughing then after smiled.

Her: I'm glad you enjoyed yourself.

Me: How are you feeling now?

Her: if this coughing can go then I'll be okay

Me: You should go to the doctor

Her: i was thinking tomorrow

Me: It's a Sunday tomorrow do surgeries open?

Her: i don't know

Me: We should try Monday, I'll go with you

Her: that will make me happy, thank you stwetla.

I got her a glass of water at the kitchen and went to give it to her, she just took a few sips then said she's fine. I put the glass away.

Me: i can sleep with you if you want.

Her: i don't need a babysitter

Me: I'm not babysitting you i just wanna sleep with my sister.

She smiled at me. I smiled at her back and went to change into my Pjs then went to join her, i switched off the light and locked our door then got in bed with her.

Me: Fan

Her: hmm?

Me: What do you think is happening with mom's funeral?

Her: i don't know stwetla.

Me: don't you think we shouldve went and gave her the best funeral ever? I mean after all she's our mother

Her: Stwetla stop beating yourself about that. Mom brought this on herself you didn't make her sick, she was living a reckless life, she was promiscuous in her days.

In my mind i was like "look whose talking about being promiscuous"

I didn't take the convo any further i just closed my eyes and fell asleep after a while.

I woke up the following day was a Sunday. I bathe then prepared water for fanny and she woke up to bath too then after i made us something to eat. Our Sunday was spent

indoors, we chilled, watched movies and all that just bonding as sisters. As the day went by we started preparing dinner at around 15:00 we were out to outdo ourselves by Cooking the best Sunday dinner ever. Gao was not around he only came when we were about to finish with dinner.

Fanny: where have you been?

Gao: I've been out handling my business.

Fanny: Okay dinner is gonna be ready in a couple of minutes.

He didn't answer he looked at her.

Gao: Nissi what are you doing tomorrow? Because i want us to go check out some chef school.

Me: Well i was gonna accompany Fanny to the doctor.

Him:for a moment there i thought you were gonna say you gonna do something important.

Fan: me going to the doctor is important Gao

Gao: You don't need Nissi to hold your hand or do you?

She looked down all disappointed.

Fan: No..

Gao: Good! Nissi be ready at 7am

Then he walked out

Fan: I'll go and set the table.

I really didn't like how Gao was treating my sister. I helped her set up the table and then dinner was ready at around 18:00 we sat at the table with Gao joining us.

Gao: i think that you've outdone yourself Nissi this food smells good.

Me: Fan deserves some credit too She helped out.

Him: ya and Fan too.

We ate our dinner in that awkwardness, Gao was talking to me more and ignoring fanny,that made Fanny a bit sad she even asked to be excused and went to the bedroom.

Me: i think fanny is upset

Him: She's just being childish!

Me: It's not nice what you did, busy ignoring her like that.

Him: I'm not ignoring her, she needs to rest she's sick.

I gave him an awkward look.

Him: Fine I'll go and Apologize.

He stood up and went to the guest room. He was there for a while until i decided to go and listen to their conversation at the door. The door was closed i leaned over to listen to them and they were arguing.

Fan: You think i can't see that you showing interest in my little sister?

Him: And if i do show interest in her, is that a crime?

Her: She's a kid Gao.

Him: And that's how i like them.

Her: i wonder how she's gonna feel if she were to find out that you are trying to sell her off to your rich friends!

Gao: don't make yourself a saint Fanny! How do you think she will feel if she hears that you told lies about your mom to get her here.

I couldn't believe my ears. I put my hands over my mouth.

Gao: Look baby we close, you can't drop the ball on me now!

Fan: she's my little sister Gao

Him: i know and I'll make sure that she's well protected in this business, she will have everything she wants and also go to school part time. After i took her to the opening of the club many of my friends couldn't stop calling me they want her, imagine how much money she can make us.

Her: I'm supposed to protect her. I feel bad enough for telling her all those lies about our mom and ruining their relationship, my mom was a good soul and i pray that wherever she is she will forgive me for this.

Wtf! All along my mom was right that i should watch out for fanny she's not good, how can fanny be this evil to lie on our mother like this! I went back to sit at the table and i was gulping that wine on the table like it was water.

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 15 BROKEN SOUL

One moment you think you know someone, then the next you don't.

Gao and my sister came to join me after a while.

Fan: Stwetla you drank half of the wine all by yourself?

Me: Yes sometimes we all need some Alcohol in our bodies

Fan: Are you okay?

Me: i don't know hey, but i should be asking you that question because you the one doing all the coughing.

Gao: I think you should go and sleep we have a lot to do tomorrow.

I stood up and went to my room. I laid in my bed thinking to myself how can i beat this people at their own game. Until an idea struck me that i am soo gonna turn Gao against fanny then make me enough money to get out of here. My mom is gone forever and my ex boyfriend dumped me like a used condom i practically have nothing so why not be a prostitute? Plus as my ex said there's no one whose gonna love me. I passed out while crying and thinking like that.

I woke up the following day bathe and prepared myself before 7am Then i went to sit at the lounge made myself cereal first and waited for Gao. He came to me at 6:45 and said we can go. We walked out to his car and made our way to the chef school. Gao put his hand on my thigh.

Him: You awfully quiet what's on your mind?

Me: Nothing much just thinking about the chef school.

Him: You'll find it very interesting it comes highly recommended

Me: i bet i will

We got to The chef school and went in. It did look like the best school ever, was the state of the art. I looked around admiring it, it was very beautiful i don't wanna lie. We went to the admin office they gave us forms, i was gonna start next year and they also gave us a tour of the school. I was falling in love with it everything seemed to be perfect from their uniform to their equipments and all that.

Gao: So do you like it?

Me: Yes i do.

What i liked mostly is the fact that they get you a job when you done with your course. It was an expensive school though R5000 registration fee, and tuition fees where R20 000.

Unfortunately there was no res so if you live far you'll have to get you a flat nearby. You can study full time or part time it's up to you, and Gao said I'm gonna be doing part time. After the tour we decided to leave and i was gonna come back soon to return the forms.

Gao: i like this school

Me: i like it too.

Him: Just know that I'm very proud of you, i wish your sister was more ambitious like you.

Me: She is ambitious

Him: i beg to differ

Me: she's a prostitute. That's an ambition right there.

He didn't answer me. We got home and Fanny was back from the doctor because we took a bit long. Gao went and kissed her on her cheek she was sitting on the couch watching tv.

Gao: What did the doctor say?

Her: said i should drink my meds then I'll be fine.

Gao: Nothing else?

Her: Nothing else.

I started walking to my bedroom

Fan: Stwetla how did it go?

Me: it went good

I walked again.

Gao: We need to talk

Fan: Now?

Gao: We might as well talk about it now, to get it over and done with.

I sat down.

Fan: First of all know that you my sister and i love you. I wouldn't do anything to hurt you or to jeopardise our relationship.

I rolled my eyes, this bitch can't be serious right now.

She looked at Gao then looked at me.

Her: uhm Nissi sometimes a woman has to go beyond her principles to do things they never thought they would do to survive.

That doesn't make her a bad person it's just hard situations and circumstances that make forces her to result in such things.

I was looking at her like out with it already!

Fan: i.. Uhm.. We don't choose to do..

Gao: out with it already fanny!

Fan: I'm trying okay, this is hard for me!

Gao: You think throwing a little speech is going to make things easier?

Fanny took a deep breath.

Fan: Gao and i think that you are a best C... We think that you..

She looked at Gao

Her: i can't do this!

Gao clenched his teeth you can just see that his getting mad.

Gao: Dammit Fanny!

Fan: She's my sister, I'm meant to protect her!

Gao: I'm getting tired of "she's my sister" that speech is getting old!

Me: I'll do it.

They both kept quiet and looked at me.

Me: You guys want me to join the prostitution business right?

They nodded

Me: Then I'll do it.

Fan: Well i.. Don't you at least wanna think about It?

Me: What's there to think about? My mother was a prostitute, my sister is a prostitute so now it's my turn, it runs in the family.

Gao: Just know that you will always be protected, a bodyguard will always be standing outside your room to make sure that you safe.

Me: so when do i start?

Gao: You can start anytime

Me: Tonight

Gao: that's a bit soon i mean you still need your sister to teach you more about this business

Me: What's difficult about opening your legs for a couple of hundreds?

They both looked down.

Me: I'll be in my room.

I walked up to my room and laid in bed with my headsets listening to music. I'm not gonna fight this especially because it's my destiny my mom was one, my sister is one and why can't I be one? I mean it's how God planned out my future. I thought of that with tears running down. Maybe this is my punishment I'm getting punished for what i did to my mother. My sister got in while i was thinking like that. I took off my headsets she laid next to me.

Her: i have to take you shopping for a sexy lingerie and a sexy outfit for tonight, Gao is already making a few calls on who you'll be hooking up with tonight.

Me: Okay

Her: Stwetla i.. This Is...

Me: What you wanted right? You lied about mom to get me here remember

She got up and looked at me all shocked.

Me: don't try to deny it, i heard you talking to Gao about it!

She looked down all ashamed to look at me in the eye.

Her: I'm HIV+ stwetla. After finding out that im sick Gao put me off the game and i was about to lose everything i worked hard for, he told me that the only way to keep all of this was to bring someone else in the game. Stwetla i couldn't bear the thought of going back home, going back to that life, that's why i got you.

Me: so you decided to lie about mom just so you can keep on having this life.

Her: Nissi don't tell me that you wanted to die in poverty. This is a good opportunity for you, all the money you gonna make, you also going to one of the best chef schools Gao will take care of you if you just do what he says and don't disappoint. Stwetla this is who we are, prostitution runs in our family mom paved a way for us, I've been doing this for quiet a long time and look how I'm living like a queen.

Me: and how do i get out of this life? When I'm HIV+ too?

That statement mad her uncomfortable

Her: meet me at the kitchen in less than 5min we have to go before Gao gets angry.

Me: Thought you sick

Her: i am but this is important.

She walked out. I went to freshen up then went to the kitchen after 5min.

Gao and Fanny were already pacing through the kitchen waiting for me. Gao looked at his wrist watch then looked at me.

Him: i wait for no one just remember that!

Me: Yea whatever.

He came up to me and gave me a hard clap.

Fanny wanted to do something but she was restricted.

Gao: and i don't like attitude! You will respect me do we understand each other?

I nodded my head,then we went out Fanny tried to hold my hand but i just yanked her hand off mine. We walked to the car and drove to Edgars. I got a sexy lingerie was a pushup bra that had a short transparent lace with a matching G-string. After that we went to get me a red dress, with red heels, and a Gold bag with a clutch bag, then drove home. I sat in my bedroom the whole day until it was time for me to prepare myself. I went to take a long bath then after i dried myself and put on my lotion and got dressed.I put on the lingerie first Then after the dress which was short and very tight, i put on my make up with my sister's help and she styled my weave. I put on a red lipstick i swear i did look sexual attractive. We Walked to the kitchen and Gao went crazy when he saw me. We got to The car and drove straight to his club. We got there and went in to some table were some guy was sitting. He was wearing Nigerian clothes had a big tummy looked like he was in his 50s.

He stood up and shook Gao's hand and then he gave me a hug and kissed me on my cheek. Gao left us and said i should call him if i need anything.

Mr man smiled at me and couldn't get his eyes off my cleavage. He was looking at me like a hungry lion that couldn't wait to devour me. I looked at him thinking to myself that Ya this is gonna be a long night.

PART 16 BROKEN SOUL

Why wasn't this man with his wife and kids? You'll never know.

Him: Sorry for starring at you like that it's just that you very beautiful.

Me: Thank you.

What was in my mind is to get this shit over and done with.

Him: I'm uche, uche ozonkokwo

Me: I'm Bennice but they call me Nissi.

Him: Nice knowing you Nissi

Me: likewise

Him: Would you like something to drink?

Me: Uhm no thank you.

Him: It's gonna be a long night, i think you should get something to drink.

Me: i would like a cider please, red square preferably.

He stood up to go get me some red square, came back with a 6pack and a glass with ice.

Me: Thank you.

Him: Why don't you tell me something about yourself?

Haibo are we here to chit chat or to do business.

Me: What would you like to know about me?

Him: anything.

Me: Well im 21 and I'm very shy.

Him: Really? But you don't look shy

Me: Believe me i am

Him: Okay what about school?

Me: Well i have matric and I'm planning to go to a chef school wanna have my own restaurant one day.

Him: That's good.

Me: Ya it is.

Him: So why are you in this business?

Me: circumstances. My mom died she was the only person i had in this world after she died i had to take care of myself and this was the only way because my sister Fanny is already one and my mom was one so it's something that runs in the family.

Him: ohhw so you are Fanny's sister?

Me: Yes

Him: Who would've thought.

Uche and i had a couple drinks and i got a bit tipsy then after we drove to his hotel room. We got there, he unlocked and we went in.

Me: so how we gonna do this?

He just stood there and looked at me.

I took off my dress, threw it on the couch and i was left with that lingerie. I made my way to him, i was scared i swear Phela that was a whole new experience for me. He left me standing there then got my dress and gave it to me.

Him: Dress up, we not gonna do anything

Me: i don't understand.

He signalled for me to take my dress. I took it and put it on, he sat down on the couch.

Him: You a very nice girl and very attractive. I don't know how you got into this life and i pretty much don't care, but what i care about is that im not gonna join forces with a group of people that want to crush your dreams. You still young and there's a lot that you can achieve.

I sat next to him.

Him: You don't have to do this Nissi you are not your mother, you are not your sister, you are you and be different, break this curse.

Me: a man with such powerful words, tell me if you feel like that then why do you buy

prostitutes.

Him: tragedies of my life. I married a very young girl and stupid me i didn't realise that she was after my money. She's sleeping around with men her age in her words exact "i won't sleep with an old man"

Me: ouch that's not a nice thing to say.

Him: I know but I'm getting used to it.

Me: Since we not gonna do anything, why don't we go out and have fun.

Him: What do you have in mind?

Me: i don't know but i saw a bar nearby, it's 20:00 the night is still young so let's go grandpa

He laughed and stood up. We went to the club wasn't far so we walked there. We got a couple of drinks just sat and talked. Was good talking to Uche he was a good person. We left the bar at 23:00 went to his hotel room. He stuck to his words and slept on the couch while i slept on the bed.

I woke up in the morning with a minor headache, i got out of bed to look for Uche he wasn't around and i noticed that he left me a stack of cash on the couch with a note. I read the note and it said:

I had a great time with you, you can have fun just by talking than doing filthy things.

Sorry i wasn't there when you woke up but here is some money for yourself and don't worry even though we didn't do anything I'm still gonna transfer cash to Gao. This are my phone numbers call me when you need help and hope to see you again. Bye.

I smiled at that and counted the money was R1500. I went to shower then put the cash in my clutch bag and saved his numbers on my phone then went out to eat breakfast. I

went to some white restaurant next door, ordered me a full English breakfast and enjoyed my breakfast. Gao called while i was still eating my breakfast.

Gao: Nissi where are you? Are you done?

Me: Ya I just woke up, i was about to shower.

Him: OK I'm coming to fetch you.

I hung up my phone ate my breakfast then went to wait for him by the hotel. He came after a few hours and i got inside his car, then he drove off.

Him: I'm not gonna ask for details that will be too much for me.

I didn't say anything. We drove home, got there and went in.

My sister came to hug me i didn't hug her back.

Her: Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine

Gao's phone beeped, he took it out and checked it then i saw him smiling.

Him: Uche has transferred the money, it's 35 000

Nissi: Wow that's a alot of cash for a first timer

Gao: I'll give you your share Nissi which is 5000

Is he joking?

Me: You only gonna give me R500?

Him: Yes that's how i work

Me: I make you R35 000 then i get to keep R5000?

Him: Yes

Me: and where is the fairness in that?

Him: life Is not fair

Me: but I'm the one that..

Him: Hey! I own you and you'll get what i give you! Be thankful at least you getting something.

He said that while walking out

MotherF*****

Me: that's not fair

Fan: don't beat yourself about it.

Me: are you kidding me? This shit is not fair

Her: i know but we can't do anything about it, let's go open a bank account for you because that's where he will have to transfer the cash for you.

I put my bag in my room, changed into a simple outfit and we went to open the bank account at capitec, then after we went out for ice creams.

Her: so how was it? Did he hurt you?

Me: it was fine

Her: come on don't be stingy with the details.

Me: ahh it's weird talking to you about this.

Her: Okay.

Days passed by, me and Uche would call each other now and then, Gao did transfer my R5000 bloody thief! All along i was thinking about what Uche said that i should make something out of my life and quit prostitution.

The day for my hook up came and Gao didn't really tell me who I'm hooking up with this time around. I prepared myself that Saturday night with the help of my sister

Ofcourse, this time i was wearing leggings with a crop tee and heels. I took my clutch bag and made my way to the kia optima, Gao was not gonna drive me this time around, the

bodyguard was gonna drive me. We got to The club Gao had told me that the man I'm hooking up with tonight will be sitting and waiting for me at the same table that Uche

was sitting at. I looked over and i couldn't believe who it was, it was Jito there was no way that i was gonna sleep with that pervert. I walked out of the club luckily he didn't

see me. I went to the same bar that Uche and i went too. I sat there drinking and thinking about him, we truly had fun, i drank alot that i passed out at the club.

I woke up the following morning and i had passed out on the table, lucky the club was open 24/7 i had a Pounding headache must've drank too much. I made my way out and

climbed a taxi to the house. I got there and Fanny was not around i saw no sign of Gao too. I went to my room threw my heels on the floor and my bag on the bed. I heard the

door open and close behind me i turned around to look who it was, it was Gao and he looked angry.

Me: i thought there was no one around

Him: What Happened to your meeting with Jito last night?

Me: Uhm.. We... Honestly speaking Gao i don't like Jito so i didn't feel comfortable being with him.

Gao: You don't sleep with someone because you like them but you sleep with them because it's business!

Me: Well it's my body and i think it's right that i choose who to hook up with.

He chuckled.

Him: well since you couldn't bring yourself to Jito last night, I'm bringing him to you.

Jito came in with a smirk on his face.

Gao: Have fun brother

Jito: can i have her for the whole day?

Gao: You can have her for the whole year if you want i don't care, do whatever you wanna do with her it doesn't matter even if you kill her afterwards i don't care because you paid good money for her..

Gao said that and went out locking the door behind him, i looked around i was stuck in here there was no way out.

PART 17 BROKEN SOUL

Yes Jito did have his way with me, for almost the whole day. It was disgusting and humiliating things that he asked me to do, like go down on him, Anal sex which i think he tore my rectum in the process and also him biting my nipples hard that i actually thought they were gonna bleed. I swear this man wanted to make sure that i never get to enjoy sex ever again. The pain i was in, i screamed until i gave up because no one came to my rescue. I was bleeding i was in too much pain i didn't want nothing anymore we didn't even use protection. My wrists were red because he tied me to the bed, my weave was a mess he was constantly pulling it my neck was red he actually went as far as strangling me with a chain. I wanted to die already because even if i make it, i don't think I'll be able to live with this. My sister came to my rescue when Jito was ontop of me, i was crying this time around instead of screaming. She was pushing him off me.

Fan: That's enough!

She pushed him until he got off Me, and i ran to sit at some corner.

Jito: i paid a great amount for this bitch!

He made his way to Me. Fan took out a knife.

Fan: If you touch my sister again i will skin you alive!

Jito laughed.

Jito: You think a stupid kitchen knife is gonna be a match for a man like me?

Jito was big and looked strong.

Gao walked in on all of us then looked around.

Gao: What's going on here?

Jito: tell this crazy bitch that i paid alot of money for that bitch!

He said that while pointing at me.

Fan: Gao he has to leave!

Gao looked at me, i had my legs up to my chest busy crying.

Gao: I'm afraid that will be all for today brother.

Jito: You cannot be serious!

Gao: You should leave, you'll come back another time.

Jito: but i paid alot of money.

Gao got Livid

Gao: i said leave!

Jito dressed up, then looked at me.

Jito: I'll see you after a week.

He then walked out.

Fan came to me she was crying now. She hugged me.

Her: It's okay I'm here, you gonna be alright.

I wanted to push her off and give her a piece of my mind, but i needed that hug. Gao left us there busy crying. Fan got a towel and wrapped it around me.

Her: come on let's get you cleaned up.

She took me to the bathroom and poured water for Me in the bathtub, she literally bathe me. My mind was far away i lost touch with reality i felt dirty no amount of foam bath can make me clean,i felt like Fanny can scrub me hard that my skin can come off that's how dirty i felt. She helped me get out of the bathtub, dried me and put lotion on me then put on my Pjs. I was in pain, walking was a bit challenging. She took me to the kitchen got me water and gave me a pill.

Her: This will help you not to fall pregnant.

I looked at the pill and drank it.

Me: I'm just gonna go lie down

Her: Okay let's go

Me: alone

Her: call me if you need anything

I nodded my head. I walked up to my bedroom, at least the whole ordeal went down on the guest room. I laid in bed crying i wanted my mom to hold me tight and tell me that everything is going to be okay, but she wasn't here she was never coming back i squeezed myself crying uncontrollably busy repeating the words "Mama come back i need you" i had my legs up on my chest hugging them very tight tears falling down singing a song that my mom always told me to sing in my darkest moments, and this was a dark moment.

Me: "kukhona iculo entlizweni, ngoba kusho izwi lakhe.. Ungesabi nginawe njalo" Translation-"There's a song In my heart, because his word says... Don't be afraid I'm always with you"

I kept on repeating that part trying to get in touch with my mother's voice. Trying to hear say "everything is gonna be okay my child". Fanny Walked in with a plate of food.

Her: i made you something to eat.

As if like food was gonna make all of this go away right now. She put the plate of food away and sat next to me with her hand rubbing me on my back.

Her: Stwetla don't do this to yourself, i know how it feels you'll just have to be strong and beat this.

Did she just say she knows how it feels like to be in this situation? I turned to her with so much anger

Me: What do you know fanny, huh? How do you know how i feel right now! Did you get sexually assaulted like i did? Did you have someone force them self on you, take away a piece of you with them and you left with a piece of them?

Her: i can see that you angry but..

I stood up all yelling.

Me: You know i blame you for all of this! You killed mom and now you wanna kill me, what kind of a human are you? Are you even human fanny? I hate you right now i wish you could die! I hate the fact that you and i we related right now! You my sister you supposed to look out for me!

She stood up too, she was also getting angry.

Her: and who looked out for me? You think you went through the worst thing ever try being me for a day! Try living with the fact that you once had 5 men exchanging you like a basket ball for 3 days! Try being chained on your leg and being treated like a dog, all beaten up. Try living with the fact that you have a disease in your body and you have to look the man who infected you everyday! You think you the only one who had it hard try being me Stwetla!

We were both in tears now.

Her: Yes I'm gonna always live with the Guilt for lying on mom like that and treating her like that but what choice did i have?

This was not going down well.

She was getting too emotional that she walked out. I sat on my bed still crying and my phone rang it was Uche i ignored i didn't want nothing to do with anything called that's "man" right now.

Days passed by fanny and i were still not In good terms i haven't spoken to Uche in a while been ignoring his calls, and i was still trying to deal with what happened. Gao came in my room one night,while i was laying in bed and listening to music and engulfed by my thoughts. I took off my headsets.

Him: Hi

I sat up straight.

Him: i just wanted to tell you that, things don't have to be like this. All you have to do is listen to me and everything is gonna be fine. Look how your stubbornness is hurting you, you invited unnecessary drama and punishment in your life right now.

Wow i can't believe this guy right now.

Him: Jito has tripled the amount and he wanna have you for Tomorrow and Sunday also, you'll come back Monday.

Today it was a Friday.

Me: Wow Gao i seriously cannot believe you right now, after all that Jito has put me through you suggesting this? What do you want him to do, kill me?

Him: Jito is less aggressive if you just listen to him and give him a good time

Me: i think we done here.

I stood up and walked to the door, Gao pulled me and threw me on the bed.

Him: Listen here you piece of rubbish! If it wasn't for me you'd still be living in whatever village you were living at. You gonna cost me a lot of money with your useless chef school so i want you to pay for all the money I'm gonna spend on you! I own you Nissi and you gonna do what i say because if you don't you'll be sorry.

He said that while walking out. Then stopped.

Him: ohh and if you think of running away then you'll see my true colours.

he went out and banged the door. I sat on my bed thinking of what i should do because i cannot let Jito violate me like that. I started pacing around the room, i can't run away Gao is gonna kill me, then an idea struck me if I'm gonna leave this place then I'm gonna leave in a coffin, I'd rather die than have Jito violate me like that. I Walked to the lounge Fan and Gao were sitting there, i walked to the bedroom and got Fanny's pills, it was about 20 pills left that will do. I walked up to my room took my phone and sent Uche a message saying my goodbyes to him, then walked to the bathroom and ran the water. I took one pill and drank it, i was crying now am i really gonna do this? Hell dare I'm scared of dying but i have no choice at least I'll join my mom wherever she is. I drank those pills then looked myself in the mirror all crying. I went back to my room and got in bed Uche was busy calling and sending me messages i ignored...i laid there starring at the wall until i got dizzy, then got very dizzy and then lights out

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 18 BROKEN SOUL

I don't know what happened but i woke up in the hospital. I was still feeling a bit dizzy, i ran my eyes around the room and Uche was sitting on the chair next to me.

Me: What.. Ha...

Uche: Princess you awake.

Me: where am i?

Him: don't say anything else I'll go and get the doctor.

Uche went out and came back with the doctor. The doctor was shining some light in my eyes.

Doctor: Welcome back, how are you feeling?

Me: a bit dizzy and thirsty.

Uche went and got me a glass of water and made me drink.

Doctor: i will come back later to check on you and i wanna make a few calls to schedule for your psychiatric evaluation

Me: psychiatric evaluation?

Doctor: You tried to kill yourself we have to take that serious because we not sure that if we let you go you won't hurt yourself again, and I'll also get in touch with a psychologist.

Me: That's unnecessary doctor

Him: it is necessary mam.

He said that while walking out.

Uche looked at me.

Uche: why were you trying to hurt yourself?

Me: How did you know that I was in hospital?

Him: i received your message then i called Fanny.

I looked down playing with my fingers, Uche tried to hold my hand but i yanked his hand off.

Him: Talk to me what happened?

Me: I..

Before i could continue Fan and Gao walked in.

Fanny hugged me

Fan: Gosh Nissi you scared us to death!

I didn't answer, Lord knows how much i didn't want them there.

Gao looked at Uche.

Gao: brother why you never told me that you coming? Unfortunately you can't have her anytime soon Jito has paid alot of money to have her for a while.

Me: You never learn Gao do you?

Gao: learn what?

Me: I'm here because of Jito does that even mean something to you?

Gao: You just acting like a drama Queen that's what's happening right now!

Me: Can you please leave!

Gao: glad too, but just know that when you feel better your responsibilities are waiting for you at home.

After saying that he left.

Me: You too Fan

Her: What did i do?

Me: You dating the devil. So please leave

Her: Fine.

She also walked out. I put my hands on my face, Gao is a monster i was tearing up.

Uche: What happened?

Me: Gao is a monster, i wish he can drop dead and die!

Uche looked at me as if like his waiting for an explanation. I told him what happened i was in tears, and he was just amazed.

Him: i knew Gao was heartless, but i never thought he was this heartless

Me: Even trying to commit suicide did not work.

There was silence for a while.

Uche: How about you come and live with me.

I looked at him as if like are you serious?

Him: i can't let you go back there, i can't let those people hurt you like that.

I understand that Uche wants to help but the question is can i trust him?

Me: i don't know Uche

Him: Please Princess

Me: i don't mean to be rude but i don't know if i can trust your kind right now.

Him: Just because you came across one that's bad, doesn't mean we all bad.

I looked at him.

Him: Just think about it, and I'll come see you tomorrow. Then he left.....

Days passed with me still in the hospital, the doctor got me a psychologist i was even on Antidepressants. The doctor came to me one morning just to check up on me you know daily routine.

Doctor: How are you feeling today?

Me: I'm hanging in there. Some days are fine, some days are blue.

Doctor: that happens alot with depressed patients

Me: if you say so

Doctor: i still don't know why you tried to kill yourself

Me: Let's just say i was hurt in a way that I will never forget. What i went through no human being should go through.

Doctor: sounds deep

Me: Ya it is.

Gao came in, my mood changed instantly. He came and kissed me on my forehead.

Gao: Morning doctor, how is my patient doing today?

The doctor noticed that i was uneasy.

Doctor: she's doing fine.

Gao: that's good to hear, so that means i can take her home soon, even tomorrow?

The doctor looked at me. I slightly shook my head.

Doctor: i wanna keep her here for a while we still have a lot of tests to run

Gao: doctor i thought you said she's fine. Plus she's been here for almost a week couldn't you run those tests then?

Doctor: she's not the only patient i have.

Gao: fine if you say so then, but if i may ask when can she be discharged?

Doctor: After we have ran the tests.

Gao: i hope its soon..

Doctor: can you please excuse us I'm not done with my patient, plus it's not visiting hours yet.

Gao looked at the doctor then went out.

Doctor: Is he the one you scared off?

I nodded yes.

Doctor: why don't you report him?

Me: His a dangerous man doctor.

Doctor: i don't like his kind. They done killed our children with drugs and prostitution. I didn't have much to contribute on that statement.

Doctor: You still have a chance to get out. You can get out its not too later for you.

After the check up the doctor went.

She probably was right.

After a while Uche came in with a basket of fruits and an adorable teddy bear. Uche had a Gold walking stick, he was limping i don't know what happened to his left leg.

Him: i hope this will make you feel better

I smiled

Me: Thank you.

He gave me the teddy bear.

Him: i think teddy bears are close to women

I chuckled

Me: i guess so

Him: have you thought about what i told you.

Me: Yes i thought about it

Him: And?

Me: i don't know Uche, you a good guy but you also a stranger to me. I don't wanna get hurt again

Him: if i wanted to hurt you don't you think i would've done that long time ago?

I looked down.

Him: i care about you Princess and what happened to you was horrific,i don't want you to go through that again.

Maybe i should give Uche the benefit of the doubt.

Me: fine I'll go with you

He smiled at me

Him: You won't regret it i promise you.

The day came for me to be discharged the doctor said she's gonna make up an excuse to tell Gao. Uche and i walked out to his car was a black chrysler 300. We got inside and the driver drove off.

Me: where are we going?

Him: Your new home, in Richards bay.

All along in the car i was praying that Lord please let me not be violated again. We stopped at some mall and Uche bought me a few clothes then we was on the road again. It was getting dark now we've been on the road for long so he suggested that we stop at a restaurant and eat. We stopped at some restaurant to eat.

Him: You've been very quiet are you okay?

Me: I'll be fine

Him: if you worried that i will hurt you,relax i won't. I have a daughter whose almost the same age as you. I wouldn't put you through what i wouldn't want her to go through.

I smiled.

Me: How many kids you have?

Him: 3. They all back at home in Lagos

Me: and your wife?

Him: She died long time ago.

Me: I'm sorry

Him: It's okay.

After finishing eating, we went out bawling it was fun he was trying to get my mind off things. I enjoy every moment i spend with Uche. He is fun to be around with, very caring and loving. We got to his house and it was a big house and was a bit close to the beach. I was tired when we got there so i asked to lie down. He showed me to my room which was a bit big, had a bathroom inside and had a white couch. Was at the early hours of the morning when we arrived. Uche took his laptop and sat on the couch while i slept.....

I was woken up by the sun, was shinning too bright. I got out off bed Uche had passed out on the couch. I went to take a shower but didn't go to the bedroom to clothe, i clothed at the bathroom then went out when i was done, Uche was now awake.

Me: Good morning

Him: Good morning princess,how are you?

Me: i feel refreshed and you?

Him: I'm fine thanks. I've been meaning to ask you.

I looked at him..

Him: did the doctor do tests? Like HIV test and pregnancy test?

Me: uhm no

Him: i think we should get you tested because i don't trust Jito he has a reputation with Prostitutes.

How can i be such a fool mara? Plus fanny has been with Jito. Uche didn't waste no time he went to bath then we made our way to the doctor. The doctor took blood samples and sent them to the lab, said i should come back after 2days for the results. Things were a bit different at home i was too quiet and disengaged in everything because i was worried about the results.....

The day of the results came, Uche and i went back to the doctor. The doctor sat us at his office and got my file.

Doctor: How are you feeling today Miss Sibiya?

Me: I'm nervous.

Uche was holding my hand.

Doctor: Let's see what the results say.

He opened my file and looked through it.

Him: Well you tested Negative for Hiv, and you also tested negative for pregnancy, tested negative for herpes and other conditions.

That was a relief i smiled and so did Uche.

Doctor: Let's not get carried away just yet because you tested positive for something.

I looked at him i mean what could i possibly test positive for?

Me: What did i test positive for?

He looked at Uche

Doctor: You sure you want him to hear this?

Uche: I'll wait at the reception

Me: No its fine, it's fine doctor you can say it in front of him.

The doctor took a deep breath.

Him: I'm sorry to inform you that you tested positive for.....

PART 19 BROKEN SOUL

I was sitting there with my palms sweaty, i felt a lump stuck on my throat as i swallowed my saliva. The Doctor looked a bit shaken by what was written in the file. He said i tested negative for Hiv and pregnancy i mean what else could be more serious than that. I waited patiently for him to say what i tested positive on.

Doctor: You tested positive for Syphilis.

That sounded foreign. I had no idea what that was.

Me: Syphilis?

Doctor: Yes. Syphilis is a sexually transmitted infection (STI) , that you get through having unprotected sex. It is a bacterial infection that is caused by the spirochete bacterium called Treponema Pallidum. It is classified into 4 stages and those stages are (Primary, secondary, tertiary, and congenital). Congenital syphilis Is transferred from mother to child during pregnancy or at birth. In your case Miss Sibiya, i believe that you have primary syphilis.

Yoooh! That sounded like a language I've never heard off before in my life.

Me: Yoooh that's deep terminologies doctor can we please come back to English.

Him: I apologize I'll try not to be complex.

Me: Thank you.

Doctor: let me ask you something first. Haven't you noticed something of an ulcer? Especially in your genital area, Anus, or in your mouth?

Me: i haven't been vigilant with that.

Him: primary syphilis presents with something we call a chancre, it's sort of an ulcer that appears in the genital area, mouth, or the Anus.

Me: i am not sure if I have that.

Him: the chancre is painless and it's not itchy i think that's why it's hard for you to notice it.

Uche: Is this syphilis dangerous doctor?

Doctor: If left untreated yes it is dangerous,as it can cause permanent damage to the Central nervous system. You very fortunate that we caught it early.

Uche: and how do you treat such condition?

Doctor: We treat it with antibiotics, specifically the preferred intramuscular benzathine penicillin G, but in your case since we caught it early I'm just gonna give you antibiotics to take orally for 6 weeks. I'm gonna give you doxycycline antibiotics we mostly used them as a substitute for patients who are severely allergic to penicillin.

Me: is it safe for Me to use them? Especially because I'm not sure if I'm allergic to penicillin or not.

Doctor: You'll be fine, and also i will give you an ointment for the chancre. Please miss Sibiya complete your medication even if you feel better.

Me: i will.

He looked at Uche, and cleared his throat as if like he was embarrassed to address this situation.

Him: And your partner must also take the medication.

I looked at Uche

Me: Ohh No his not my partner, his good he doesn't have this, his not the one who gave me this syphilis.

Him: then that's good because you don't know how much it would've been awkward for me.

We all laughed

Doctor: and one last thing, no sexual intercourse please.

I nodded my head. He gave me the antibiotics and the ointment and told me to see him after 6 weeks. I thanked him then we walked out to Uche's car. We didn't go directly at home we stopped by at Something fishy and got us something to eat.

Uche: for a moment there i was scared that the doctor was gonna say you have a serious condition such as cancer.

Me: Syphilis sounds serious. Such a fancy way for the doctor to tell me that i am dying.

Uche: You not dying, just take your pills and you'll be fine.

Me: i guess so.

My phone rang and it was Gao, i turned it upside down all irritated.

Uche: Whose that?

Me: Gao

Uche took my phone, opened it and took out the sim card and put it in my glass that had Ginger ale in it.

Him: Problem solved. We'll get you another Sim.

Me: so i must drink a cool drink that has a sim card?

Him: i doubt that will kill you.

I laughed.

Me: Tell me, what is your size 10 wife gonna say, with me living at the house?

Him: i doubt she's gonna come back anytime soon so don't worry.

Me: I'm not worried, i just don't like drama.

He smiled.

Him: There will be no drama.

We ate then after did a bit of shopping and i got a new sim card, and then after we went home. Uche sat down on the couch, all sweating and looking tired, which was funny because we didn't do much of walking.

Me: Are you alright?

Him: Yes just old age catching up with me. Would you please get me a glass of cold water.

Me: Okay.

I went to the kitchen and got him water and i put ice in it, then gave it to him. He took it.

Him: Thank you.

I sat next to him, while he gulped that water like it was nothing.

Him: That was good.

Me: so what's your story? I ain't buying the old age catching up with me story.

He chuckled, then took out a handkerchief from his pocket and wiped the sweat off his face.

Him: I was diagnosed with hypertension and Diabetes a few years ago.

Wow that was big.

Him: at one time my diabetes was unstable that i had a gangreous leg doctors wanted to amputate it because it looked very horrible and scary was rotten and smelling, at some point people thought that i was bewitched. No one wanted to be close to me.

Me: So how did the doctors save your leg?

Him: They couldn't save it, they did amputated it. I have a prosthetic leg.

He lifted up his pants, and Wow it was indeed a prosthetic leg.

Me: Wow i didn't think that your leg was fake.

Him: it is fake that's why Im limping and have this walking stick.

Me: story of our lives.

Him: but we'll be alright. So what you have planned for this Christmas?

I forgot that Christmas was just around the corner, it was in 3 days time.

Me: Well i don't know i mean i don't have a family to spend it with.

Him: What about your parents?

Me: They died

Him: I'm sorry to hear that

Me: It's okay.

Him: in that case we'll spend Christmas together

Me: Ain't you gonna spend it at home with your children?

Him: They all married i reckon they would wanna spend it with their families.

I smiled.

For the next few days i took my medication both antibiotics and Antidepressants, Uche made sure that i also eat healthy. The nightmares of what Jito did to me still haunted me but Uche got me a psychologist that would come 3 times a week to speak to me. It was now the 23rd of December, I woke up that morning and bathe because Uche and i we were going to do some Christmas shopping. I went down to the kitchen and he was on the phone, from the conversation i could make out that he was speaking to Gao.

Uche: i told you that she is not with me, if i do see her or if she contacts me I'll let you know.

Uche turned around and saw me.

Uche: i have to go Gao, i have important things to do.

He hung up.

Me: His looking for me?

Him: Yes but he should give up because he will never find you.

Me: i should thank you again Uche for saving me and letting me stay here, i don't know how i could ever repay you.

Him: repay me by going to school next year and opening your restaurant one day, and speaking of school we must go and search for a chef school.

I looked at him puzzled.

Him: You once told me that you wanna be a chef so I'm out to make sure that you make that dream come true.

Me: uhm Uche you don't have to do that, i mean you've already done enough.

Him: i want too princess. So stop arguing with an old dying man and let's go to the mall before the shops get full.

I put my arm around his and we walked out.

Him: You want some Christmas clothes while we at it?

Me: How old do you think i am, 10?

Him: one doesn't get old for Christmas clothes.

Me: why don't we get you ones.

Him: I'm 60, but I'm still gonna accept the clothes if you buy.

I laughed. We went to his car and drove to the mall. We got food, Uche got us presents and a tree wanted to make this Christmas official. On Christmas Eve we didn't do much, just set up the tree, wrapped the presents and put them under the tree, i got me a recipe book was trying to bake a Christmas cake but that didn't go well the kitchen was a mess when Uche walked in.

Him: What happened here?

Me: i was trying to bake a cake, and it didn't turn out good.

Him: i can see that.

Me: guess we don't have a cake for Tomorrow

Him: Oh no we can't have that let's go shopping for one.

I quickly went upstairs to freshen up then we went. When we got to The mall we was walking to pick n pay then Uche noticed a photo booth and said we must take photos.

We went inside and took the most craziest pictures while i was sitting ontop of him.

When we were done we went out and got our photos i was busy looking at them all laughing, we looked crazy with our funny faces and Christmas hats on. I put my hand

around his, and we slowly walked to pick n pay, with him limping and leaning on his walking stick for support. I looked at him and thought of all the fun I'm having with this

old soul.

PART 20 BROKEN SOUL

Uche and i had the best Christmas ever, just the 2 of us. We ate a scrumptious dinner, opened our presents that he bought for us, he had bought me a Samsung tab 10.1 and a Samsung galaxy s6 edge phone.

Uche was a gentleman i loved every moment that i spent with him, he made me laugh, made me feel special and all. Our whole December was just Wow we even went to Ushaka marine world, we spent our new year at home just enjoying each other's company. January had come and it was back to reality Uche wanted me to go and register at some college but it was not a chef school i was gonna study nursing we couldn't find any chef school. I didn't mind studying nursing just that i didn't have my qualifications to apply so that's where my sister came in. I called her from a public phone wanted her to fax me my things, and she did answer the phone.

Her: Hello

Me: hi fan, it's me.

Her: Stwetla?

Me: Yes

Her: Omg! Were are you, are you okay? I've been worried sick about you.

Me: Don't worry I'm fine.

Her: where are you? Gao has been looking all over for you.

Me: i can't tell you but just know that I'm safe.

Her: I'm glad that you safe

Me: Look i need a favour from you..

Her: What favour?

Me: i need you to fax my qualifications for me please. I wanna enrol at some nursing college.

Her: Wow really?

Me: Yes so let me give you the fax number.

I had got some Internet café's fax number, and i gave it to her.

Me: can you fax them today if possible please.

Her: Okay I'll do that.

Me: Thank you.

Her: Where did you put them?

Me: in my room check in the wardrobe.

Her: Okay I'll do that

Me: Thanks again

Her: No problem. let me go before Gao realises that im on the phone with you.

Me: Okay bye

She hung up. I walked to the Internet café waiting for the fax. It arrived after 2 hours when I've lost all hope that she was gonna fax. I was happy to get my things, tomorrow I'm going to apply at the nursing college my life has just begun i wish my mom was here to see me, she would be very proud. I walked to the house and Uche was busy on his laptop.

I snuck up on him and scared him. He really did freake out, that moment deserved a laugh.

Him: You wanna give me a heart attack? You forgetting that im an old man.

I went to seat ontop of him and kissed him, Yes we had grown very close this past few days.

Him: did you get your things?

Me: Yes i did

Him: You didn't tell her where you are?

Me: No because that would be very stupid of me.

He smiled.

Me: What are you doing?

Him: Just handling some business.

Uche owns a oil rig.

I closed his laptop.

Him: What are you doing? I'm not done

Me: You always working and that's not healthy, did you even take your medication?

Him: i should be asking you that.

Me: Well i did take my antibiotics and Antidepressants i never forget.

Him: And i did take my medication too.

Me: Well then I'll take your word for it.

Him: Ain't you supposed to be having your therapy session? Where's your psychologist?

Me: She is still on vacation won't be back until next week.

Him: Okay.

Me: I'm so happy about this nursing course and i can't wait to go Register tomorrow.

Him: That's tomorrow?

Me: Yes, please don't tell me that you forgot

Him: not really i just have this meeting i have to attend tomorrow

Me: Can't you reschedule for some other time you know how important this is to me.

Him: Sorry princess i can't it's very important.

That was disappointing, i was sad.

Him: I'm just pulling your leg. I know how important this is to you.

Me: For a moment you almost caused me a heart attack.

Him: I'm sorry princess.

Me: It's fine.

Him: don't you have anything you wanna do for an hour? Because i really have to finish what i was doing.

Me: What were you doing?

Him: Just checking my money some figures don't add up so I'm trying to see what's going on.

Me: Okay then I'll just seat next to the pool and have lunch.

Him: i think that's a good idea.

I gave him a kiss and went. I put the papers in our bedroom, Yeap we were sharing the same bed but no sexual intercourse. After that i went to make me some snack and sat by the pool with my tab watching movies. When the sun was setting i went to prepare dinner and Uche was still on his laptop. I went and took it from him.

Me: That's it! you been on your laptop for too long.

Him: i didn't realise that I've been on it for that long.

Me: Go freshen up and when you come down dinner will be ready.

He didn't argue with me he went upstairs. I finished with dinner and set the table. Uche came when i was done and we had dinner. after dinner i went to shower and we went to bed. He always Holds me tight when we sleep and i felt safe in his arms.....

We woke up In the morning and prepared ourselves then drove to the college. We got there and i was happy to see that they still had space left and they had Me fill some forms for registration which i did and I gave them the necessary documents.They gave me the time table classes were starting in 2 weeks time, and gave me a paper of the prescribed text books. The diploma was 3years i had to choose between community nursing, psychiatric nurse, and midwifery. They only had space on the psychiatric nursing so i took that. I went to sit down and waited for Uche who went to pee you know diabetic people with always going to the toilet. Some girl came to sit next to me.

Her: hi

Me: Hey

Her: My name is Sindi

Me: I'm Nissi

Her: i couldn't help it but noticed that you and i are gonna be in the same class

Me: Really?

Her: Yes, I enrolled for psychiatric Nursing too.

Me: Well that's good.

Her: Are you from here?

Me: Ya you can say that.

I wasn't gonna tell people that im from Jozi or witbank wasn't safe and i trust nobody.

Her: did you come alone?

Me: No I'm with my bf

Her: that's nice and I'm with my parents.

Me: Okay

Her: Where is your bf?

Me: He went to th...

Uche showed up.

Me: ohh there he is.

I saw her getting shocked.

Uche: Are you ready to go princess?

Me: Yes but first before we go, i want you to meet my new friend Sindi, me and her we gonna be sharing the same class, and Sindi meet my bf Uche Ozonkokwo

Uche greeted her with the smile, the poor girl's throat raised no words she just smiled at him then stood up and walked away, i laughed.

Uche: What was that all about?

Me: don't worry it was nothing.

We walked out of there to his car holding hands some people where looking at us and gossiping, i really didn't care. People will talk whether you doing something good or bad. We drove home, i was so happy for the first time in my life knowing that i don't have to use my body to get ahead this time around im going to use my brains.

We got home i made Uche some food after eating he went to lie down. I went and wore one of his Nigerian shirts. Was loong could swear it was a dress. I went to the kitchen with it and then suddenly the door opened while i was busy deciding on what we gonna eat tonight.

a girl came in she looked young, looked younger than me. She was wearing a very short denim skirt, with a big belt, a spaghetti top and knee boots. Her weave looked like a mess she was a mess on her own looked like she hadn't slept In a couple of days. She was on the Phone and as soon as she laid her eyes on me she dropped her phone. She came closer, and my lord she was smelling like a brewery and her eyes were red.

Her: Who are you?

Her voice was scratchy sounded like she had been screaming alot that it went.

Me: The question is who are you?

Her: I am the Madam of this house.

She looked at me from head to toe.

Her: Are you wearing my man's..

Before she could finish her sentence she put her hands on her head and started turning around.

Her: ohh Lord Chineke! I know Uche didn't bring a bitch in my house! Heeee!

Me: Excuse me I'm right here, who you busy talking too while facing the door?

Her: I'm not talking to you, I'm having a conversation with myself!

I rolled my eyes and folded my arms..

Me: crazy bitch!

Her: What you saying to me yooooo?

Bitch was forcing the Nigerian accent.

Her: Where is Uche?

She started screaming Uche's name and attempted to go upstairs but i pushed her back.

Me: You making noise his sleeping

She jumped up and down.

Her: You put your hands on me yooo? Lord Chineke help me now before i beat this girl!

Me: beat who? Me? Don't make me laugh..

Bitch started taking off her earring, then boots and tied her weave.

Her: i will beat you! I say i will beat you today!

I tied my weave too.

Me: bring it on!

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 21 BROKEN SOUL

I ain't good with fighting but i wasn't gonna be beaten by some whore. She made her way to Me, when she tried to slap me i held her hand and pushed her back. She came back full force and grabbed my weave, i grabbed hers too. We went round and round pulling each other's weaves and screaming it was like we were two white girls who knew nothing about beating the crap out of each other. After a while we let go.

Her: You know this is getting us nowhere

Me: it's getting us nowhere for real

Uche: You guys don't even know how to fight!

We didn't notice Uche who was standing at the stairs. The girl ran to him trying to touch him.

Her: Uche how are you daddy?

Uche got her hands off him.

Uche: have you no Shame Amelia? Look at you, you look disgusting.

Amelia: Well i..

Uche came down to me.

Uche: that's my good for nothing wife.

Amelia: Good for nothing?

Uche: Yes good for nothing! You have been gone for a long time, had it been not for this Princess i would've spent Christmas alone make that i would've spent everyday alone.

Amelia: that's because I was busy daddy i told you. I had some business to handle.

Uche: I'm tired of hearing that.

Her: but it's true.

Uche: Well then here's the situation Either you live with My princess or you get out of my house.

He started walking upstairs.

Uche: And this fighting thing please cut it off because both of you can't even fight.

He continued walking upstairs.

We looked at each other, then she clicked her tongue took her belongings and went upstairs.

I wasn't really gonna entertain that. I started with dinner, and set the table. I cooked a simple meal rice, beef stew and vegetables. Uche came down when i was about to finish cooking

Him: That smells good.

Me: Thank you.

I didn't even look at him i was upset i mean his thing of a wife is back so where does that leave me?

Him: Are you okay?

I nodded my head yes.

He tried to hold my hand but i moved and went to take out glasses.

Him: is this about Amelia?

I shrugged my shoulders.

Him: If it is about Amelia then you have nothing to worry about. I promise you there's no connection between us, she is just after my money.

me: she's your wife.

He came to me and put his hands around my waist.

Him: And you are my princess.

As if like that was gonna make me feel better, i don't even know why I was upset could it be that i was feeling something for him?

Him: You and i we have a connection and I'm not gonna ruin that because my good for nothing wife showed up.

I smiled.

Him: i was gonna kick her out but she has nowhere to go, and i won't really feel good knowing that she's sleeping on the streets.

Uche with his forever good heart.

Him: i love you Princess.

That was kinda surprising because that's the first time Uche has said those words to me.

Me: I love you too.

We kissed then after he helped me finish up preparing dinner. Amelia came down while we were eating.

She had now showered and looked clean and civil. She was kinda pretty.

Amelia: I think there's a lot that needs to be discussed here.

Uche and i didn't say anything. She sat down.

Amelia: Uche i am sorry that i haven't been a Good wife to you, but now things are gonna change I'm gonna perform my duties as a wife.

Uche: Are you saying that because you feel threatened by the fact that there's another woman in my life who can be a better wife to me than you.

She gave me a cold stare.

Her: No, i don't feel threatened by anything or no one! I was just scared that's all I mean i was 19 when we got married i was young and naive.

She was 19 when they got married? How old is she because she still looks 19.

Uche: if you knew that you weren't ready for marriage then you shouldn't have agreed to marry me.

Her: I'm truly sorry But Please give me one last chance I'll prove to you that I can be a good wife.

Uche: That's too late

Uche looked at me.

Uche: There's someone else who got a hold of my heart now.

I gave her a conniving smile.

.....

Days passed with me and Amelia still not getting along with each other, we was a cat and a dog. She stayed out of my way and i stayed out of hers. She tried by all means to get Uche back, but Uche was having none of that, he even put her out of the main bedroom.

The day for me to go to school came. I was very excited and scared at the same time i had everything prepared had my text books and everything I'll need. I woke up that Monday morning and bathe, then got dressed. I looked at my time table and packed my text books according to the classes I'm gonna attend today. Uche was already awake, he was an early bird that one. He wasn't in the bedroom so i reckoned that maybe he left for the office. I made my way to the kitchen and surprisingly he was at the kitchen.

Me: i thought that you went to the office.

Him: And miss my Princess' First day i don't think so.

I smiled.

Him: Are you ready for your first day?

Me: Ya and I'm nervous too.

Him: i think you'll do just fine.

This was truly an exciting experience.

He held my hands..

Him: know that I'm very proud of you

Me: Thank you, and look at the time i have to go i don't wanna be late for my first day.

Him: Ain't you gonna eat something?

Me: No I'm too excited I'll eat at school

He chuckled

Him: Okay let's go

We walked out to his car and we drove off to the college. He dropped me at the gate kissed me goodbye and said i should call him when I'm done,he gave me R350 for lunch. I got out of the car and slowly Walked in i was smiling. I took my time table out and asked around for directions and finally I went to Attend my first class. I just sat down all by myself the class was big we were like 38. On my next classes i just followed the crowd with Sindi who came to me after a while.

Her: Nissi right?

Me: Yes.

Her: I'm Sindi, hope you still remember me.

Me: don't worry i do

Her: Okay, how are you finding the classes.

Me: They okay i mean there's not much to tell about them it's still the introduction.

At 13:00 it was lunch we went to eat and some other girls from the class joined us we were now 5. We bought food and sat under some tree. I enjoyed their company they were fun to be around we sat there all eating and chatting nicely. At 14:00 we went back to attend our last class which came out at 15:00,after that i said my goodbyes to my new friends and called Uche to fetch me. I waited for him at the gate and he didn't take that long to come. He stopped by the gate and i went in the car then we drove home.

Him: How was your first day at school?

Me: it was very nice i made a couple of friends.

Him: And how are you finding the classes?

Me: Not much happened just the introduction.

Him: Okay Princess.

We arrived home and went in.

Me: Where is Amelia?

Him: She disappeared again.

Aii that girl got to stop living dangerously. Uche said i shouldn't cook today because i might be tired so we just ordered pizza and had dinner as usual in the lounge.

The door bell rang while we were eating.

Me: Expecting anyone?

Him: No

Before we could stand up the door closed and then i heard a familiar voice screaming "Uche". We both stood up to check who it was and It was Gao he was with his hooligans, damn this was not gonna go down well. When he saw us he went ballistic.

Gao: So you have been hiding her here?

Uche: How did you get in here?

Gao: because your security is a joke!

Uche: You not welcomed here so please leave

Gao looked at me.

Gao: I'm here to take what belongs to me

He came to grab me but i protested.

Uche: Leave her alone Gao! You can see she doesn't want to go!

Gao: She doesn't get to make those demands

He grabbed me by my hand again and i bit him, he slapped me and pushed me i fell.

Uche walked up to him and Gao took out his gun and pointed it at Uche. I was still on the floor trying to make sense of what was going on. There was silence for a while then after Gao shot Uche, he must've shot him 5 times in his chest. Uche went down i swear all of a sudden the room moved slow, everything was just going In slow motion as i crawled my way to Uche who was now on the floor laying in the pool of his blood. I held him he was

now bleeding through his mouth. Tears where falling when i saw him in that pain.
Me: Come on Uche don't leave me, try to hold on until i get you help
He couldn't say anything he was struggling to breath then after a few seconds it was over he stopped moving and stopped breathing with his eyes opened and he had tears, with his mouth slightly opened too. I couldn't believe that i had lost Uche like that, i put my head on his chest and let out a cry

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 22 BROKEN SOUL

I felt like my heart was ripped out of my chest. I mean what am i gonna do without Uche. Gao came to get me up he pulled me by my weave then instructed his men to “take care of the body” and walked me out. My clothes had Uche’s blood, we walked to the car and i saw that our security who monitors our surveillance camera was held at gun point.

Me: Before we leave i wanna talk to our security.

Gao: What for?

Me: i want him to send off my things for me since i couldn’t take anything with me but my phone

Gao: i don’t have time for this!

He grabbed me by my arm and dragged me to the car,i went inside and he came in after me then the car went. We left there while i was looking back at Uche’s house, i was never gonna see this house ever again. Gao was busy pulling my weave back.

Him: That’s some fucked up shit you did but as a good person that I am i forgive you, that’s why I’m not gonna hurt you.

What was he talking about his not gonna hurt me, he just killed a man that means the world to me and his gonna say his not gonna hurt me? I was sitting there feeling like puking at the sight of him.

Me: How did you even find me?

Him: it wasn’t hard really with your phone records, Uche was the only person you had most contact with,he was the last person that you contacted when you tried to kill yourself.

Why can’t God just do us a favour and strike this monster with lightning. We drove in silence until it started to get dark then he decided that we go and sleep at some hotel. We got there and booked a room got the key and went to the elevator. I can’t believe that im gonna share the same room with someone who killed the man i was starting to love. We unlocked the hotel room and went inside. He closed the door behind us then after looked at me as if like he was undressing me with his evil eyes.

Him: I think that you should take a shower, all that blood doesn’t look good on you.

Me: Id rather stay with this blood on me because it reminds me of the person that once cared about me and thanks to you his gone now.

Him: You might find this hard to believe but i do care about you.

I rolled my eyes.

Me: Yea right

Him: You wouldn’t know Uche if it hadn’t been for me, so you should be going down on your knees right now busy thanking me, actually you should be worshipping me.

Me: You not God Gao for Me to do that.

Him: i am, and you forgot that i gave you life.

Me: What life did you give me?

Him: if it wasn’t for me you’d still be stuck in that poor life of yours, busy slaving around everyday for your sick mother!

Cannot trust Fanny to keep her mouth shut!

Me: Right now I’d rather be doing that than having this conversation with you!

He sent out an evil laugh.

Him: Nissi you soo blind, you can’t even see heaven when it’s presented to you. You have been living a luxurious life with me all you had to do or all you have to do is to just follow my orders.

Me: i follow no orders!

Him: well starting from today you will,and right now i order you to go take a shower.

Me: i told you that I’m not going to do that.

Him: It’s an order not a request

Me: why do you even want me to take a shower so bad? Can’t you live with what you’ve

done huh? Can't bear to see Uche's blood on me because what you did will haunt you?

Him: i wish that was true, but I just wanna see those breasts

I immediately put my hand on my chest trying to cover my cleavage

He chuckled

Him: believe me dear it will have to take 10 hands to cover that up.

Gao was just something that i cannot put in words i swear. He signalled with his hand that i should go to the bathroom. I shook my head No, then he gave me an intimidating look that i marched my little ass to the bathroom with him following me. I got inside and he closed the door then he looked at me. I also looked at him, we was gonna play this starring at each other game.

Him: You can start undressing.

Me: i don't find it comfortable undressing while you starring at me.

He smiled.

Him: You shouldn't find it uncomfortable because you a prostitute, this should be easy for you.

I pulled my t-shirt trying to cover up my breasts.

He was getting irritated

Him: Come on Nissi, it's not like I'm asking you for sex! Well not yet.

What was he talking about "Not yet"

Me: but still i find it uncomfortable.

Him: i suggest you undress on your own before i undress you!

I didn't undress i stood there. He locked the door then went and ran hot water in the bathtub. The water came out steaming hot after a while and the room was starting to fill up with steam,he then came to me and started reaping my clothes off from my body, then dragged Me to the bathtub but he didn't put me inside, he just held me from my neck and forced my head to the Water and dipped me inside for a few seconds,I've felt pain before but I've never felt soo much pain i screamed and trying to get him to stop.

Him: next time when i tell you to do something you better listen to me, understand?

Me: I understand

I was now crying my face was burning.

Him: Now be a good girl and bath, I'll come back and check up on you.

He unlocked then went out and locked the door behind him.

I looked myself in the mirror, my face was red, I'm sure that there's no guy whose gonna look at me after this.

I tried to bath but it was hard, i mean how do you bath while your face is still burning. I took the quickest bath ever then went to run cold water on my face, that was a bit better. Gao came back while i was doing that and i jumped in fear when i heard the key turning. I wrapped a towel around my body. He got in and looked at me, my face was dripping with water.

Him: That's how I want it to be, you taking orders do we understand each other?

Me: Yes.

Him: Now we can sleep we have a long day tomorrow.

We walked out of the bathroom.

Him: You can sleep on the floor, like a dog because that's what you are, a dog!

He said that and got a leash, where he got that i don't know.

Him: I'm very lucky to have people working for me. They take orders without arguing with me or questioning me, could be nice if you could do the same.

He put the dog leash around my neck and tied it to the bed, it was soo tight around my neck i really thought that i was gonna stop breathing and die.

He took off the towel around me. He took off his shirt and was only left with pants then switched off the light and slept on the bed with me sitting there like a dog. I was lucky that the floor was a carpet or else i would've died of hypothermia. I didn't sleep i actually cried all night while Gao was busy snoring on the bed, i was thinking about

Uche and how much of a princess he would treat me and my face was having no mercy on me it was still burning like hell!.. I don't know when and how i fell asleep but i felt cold water coming into contact with my skin, i freaked out,i realised it was in the morning now.

Gao: It's Time to go.

He threw a new dress on me then took off the leash off my neck. I put on the dress and we made our way out of the hotel. I wasn't wearing any shoes I'm sure my face looked like a mess and so was my weave people were starring at me. Gao gave back the keys and we went to his car then drove off. I wasn't talking in the car my mind was far away.....

We got to Jozi and my depression started i wasn't very happy about this place. We got to The house and went in. Fanny was making food in the kitchen, she was shocked to see me especially in that state, she looked at Gao.

Gao: Don't even ask.

He said that and walked to the bedroom.

Fanny came close to hug me but i acted cold towards her that she stepped back. I went to the bedroom and there wasn't a key at the door. I sat on the bed and cried i wanted to commit suicide again but this time around i really was gonna make sure that i die. I laid on the bed crying.

Gao came in with Fanny after some time, really this people should give me some breathing space.

Gao: You gonna start working tonight!

I didn't respond.

Gao: Fan will get you ready and I'm the potential client.

Fan: i think it's too quick Gao look at how she is.

Gao gave Fan a death stare, fanny got scared and kept quiet.

Gao: i want to find her at her best at 7pm.

He then left. Fanny came to me was patting me on the back.

Fan: i have to try to get you out of here Before this Bastard kills you! I'm not gonna have him sleep with you,his sick for crying out loud.

I seriously didn't care about Fanny and what she was saying. She walked out of my room. I laid there the whole day without moving or anything it was like i was frozen.

At 5pm Fan came rushing in.

Fan: Nissi it's time

I still didn't pay attention to her.

Her: Gosh Nissi it's time for you to run away!

I slowly got up did she say what i think she said. She gave me my ID and my matric results they were folded with a piece of paper written some name and surname.

Her: You have to listen to me carefully. When you get out of here run as fast as you can to the hillbrow police station. When you get there ask to speak to this detective i already wrote his name and surname for you on the paper. Tell him everything about Gao tell him i sent you then when you done go home that's the only place Gao doesn't know, he will never find you.

I looked at her puzzled i mean wasn't she the one who brought me here?

Her: Nissi please this is your last and only chance to be free

Me: What about you Gao is going to kill you if he finds out that you helped me escape

Her: don't worry about me

Me: Why are you doing this?

Her: Because i owe it to you and mom.

I smiled at her. She took me by my hand and we ran to the kitchen there was a bodyguard at the door.

I whispered to her.

Me: So what now?

Her: You run!

She took out a gun from her waist and started shooting at the bodyguard, the bodyguard tried reaching for his gun but from the way that Fan was firing he couldn't.

Me: Wtf Fan!.

Fan: Go!

Me: What about Gao?

Him: I tricked him to go and buy you a lingerie so Go before he gets back.

I hugged her and started running out. I didn't know where i was running too but i ran as fast as i could barefooted. When i was far from the house i stopped to catch my breath and ran again, i kept on doing that until i was in the presence of people. I asked people to direct me to the police station and it took forever to find it, but eventually i did. I went in all breathing fast looking like a mess my feet were bleeding from getting cut, some police woman attended me very quickly she probably thought i was raped i gave her the paper told her i wanna speak to this detective, she told me his off i asked her to call him because this was important. She didn't waste no time took the phone and called him. The detective came after waiting for him for too long, he went to the police woman who called him and she pointed at me. He came to get me and we went to some interrogation room. He was white so i knew that i could trust him. This time around Gao was going down for good, this was for all the people he has hurt. Me, Uche, and Fanny!

PART 23 BROKEN SOUL

He asked if he could get me coffee? I said no. I was shit scared i swear what I'm about to do was gonna put my life at risk and Fanny's life. He put his cigarette on the ash tray.

Him: I'm all ears.

Me: Thank you for agreeing to see me, and i was sent here by my sister Fanny i don't know if you know her?

Him: I do.

Me: I'm here to tell you everything about Gao.

That grabbed his attention,he sat up straight and put all his attention on me.

I explained everything to him from the prostitution and Gao killing Uche. He put his hand on his head and kept quiet for a while.

Him: You have no idea what you've just done young lady.

That was an intimidating statement i swear, it was even hard swallowing my saliva.

Him: You have helped us put an end to a case that we were struggling with for alot of years now. If what you just told me is true then I'll make sure that I take Gao down. It's gonna be difficult to pin him to the murder because there's no proof.

Me: There is, Uche has surveillance cameras all around his house.

Him: How can we get that?

Me: You will have to go down to Kzn in search of the security guard.

Him: Don't you know where he lives?

Me: No.

Him: You don't have any information about him?

Me: Naa only that he was working for us,i can give you Uche's address you can also search his house you'll probably find something there.

He passed me a pen and paper, then i wrote the address and everything.

Him: we'll need a written statement from you, i doubt you will be able to testify against him in the court of law.

Me: That is true i can't bear to look at him, and i would also like to open a charge of attempted murder against him, he almost burnt me to death.

Him: Ofcause you can, we also have to put you on witness protection to make sure that you safe until Gao is sent to jail.

Me: if you don't mind detective i would like to go home.

Him: We can't let you do that, it's not safe what if Gao finds you

Me: I assure you that's the safest place i could be right now.

He looked at me for a while.

Him: Okay, can we at least drive you home? To make sure that you arrive safe.

Me: Yes.

We did alot of paperwork first then after we went to the car with 2 other cops accompanying us. We drove home and tears were falling, i know home is not the best place to be but at least I'll be safer there and be closer to my mom's memories.

We stopped at garages busy buying some refreshments and all that.....

.....

We made it home safe but we arrived there very late at night. I got out of the car and looked around to familiarise myself with the place, the detective got out too.

Him: Should we walk you in?

Me: No thank you I'll be fine.

Him: Thank you again you did a risky thing but yet it was a good deed,i don't know how we can repay you because we have been trying to bring down Gao.

Me: I'm glad i could help. The only thing you can repay me with is by making sure that Gao goes to jail.

Him: I'll make sure and I'll also contact your sister to give us a statement.

Me: Thank you.

He gave me a handshake

Him: Take care.

I watched the car drive off until i couldn't see it anymore. I turned around and looked at my house, I was glad to be back at home again. I started walking in and all of a sudden, some young couple came out of the house. The girl was pregnant.

Her: Hello.

I kept quiet and looked at them.

Her: Can we help you?

Me: more like can i help you? This is my house.

Her: Your house?

Me: Yes i lived all my life here, i grew up here and my mother died in there.

Her: Ohhhh you must be the previous owner.

Previous owner? Like wtf! That is my house.

The Nigga started talking.

Him: This house was abandoned when we moved in here

I forgot that in this neighbourhood people can just move in your house if you have neglected it, and the sad truth is that you cannot do anything about it because it's an informal settlement and close to the mine, so the cops won't bother.

Me: Ohw i see

Her: We truly sorry

I didn't say anything. The Nigga held the girl's hand.

Him: Let's go baby.

They Walked out of the yard. I got closer to the house and the door was locked. All my memories were gone or locked in that house. Where was i gonna go? I started walking out slowly, then i thought to myself that i have a friend but that's only if she's still my friend.

I walked to Luzuko's shack, i was scared especially because we weren't seeing eye to eye anymore. I got to her shack and knocked, it was a soft knock. She opened the door after knocking for a long time. she didn't look happy to see me. She stood by the door didn't even let me in.

Her: Can i help you?

Me: Hi Zuko..

Her: cut the greetings. Isho ozengako (get straight to the point)

Me: Wow not even Hey Chomp, please come in.

She looked irritated and tried to close the door but i stopped her.

Me: Zuko Please i have nowhere to go, you my last hope.

She looked at me from head to toe.

Her: What happened to iGoli?

Me: Look at my face that's what happened.

She kept quiet.

Me: Zuko Please i know when i left things between you and i were not good. I shouldve listened to you, i shouldve listened to mom when yall warmed me against Fanny.

She looked at me, then after flashed a smile.

Her: Welcome home.

She stepped away and i got in. I sat down on the couch. She started boiling water with her paraffin stove.

Her: so what happened to you?

Me: Alot that i don't wanna talk about.

She looked at me.

Me: i ended up being a prostitute, and dated an older guy, chomp it's just a complicated story.

Her jaw almost dropped.

Her: did you learn a lesson from that experience though?

Me: Yes i did, i learned a valuable lesson.

Her: I'm glad.

She made me coffee in a big cup. I was a bit shocked where did she get the cash for coffee and milk those things are expensive.

Me: You can afford coffee now?

Her: Yeap

Me: What happened, did you finally put that Bastard on child support?

Her: Nope

Me: Then what is it?

Her: i got a job at town. I'm working at kfc.

Me: Wow chomp that's great

Her: Ya chomp it is.

Me: for how long have you been working there?

Her: about a month now.

Me: Then I've been gone for too long.

Her: yaa it's been long.

I wanted to touch a sensitive subject.

Me: Uhm chomp

Her: Talk to me.

Me: My...

I cleared my throat.

Me: What happened to my mom's body?

She put aside her coffee cup.

Her: We buried her.

Me: Asnt like there was a funeral?

Her: Yes. Sis mazel talked to the Pastor and the Pastor asked the congregation to donate cash for the funeral.

Me: How was the funeral?

Her: it was very beautiful, she was laid to rest in a dignified way.

Me: i wish i was there.

Her: You should've been there.

I sipped on the coffee.

Her: tomorrow im not going to work, why don't i take you to her grave?

Me: Are you serious?

Her: Yes, so you can cleanse your conscious.

I laughed a bit.

Me: As for cleansing my conscious, but thank you chomp i really wanna see where she was laid to rest.

We talked for a bit then Zuko made me water and i bath.

Her: What happened to your face?

Me: Alot girl don't even ask..

Her: Aii ke we'll leave it like that.

She borrowed me a t-shirt to sleep with and socks. We joined Mpumi who was sleeping on the bed.....

Zuko woke me up at 4am,you know us black people we always wanna visit the graveyard early. I woke up and splashed water on my face, then rinsed my mouth. Zuko borrowed me her clothes, i wore and she prepared herself too and put Mpumi on her back then we left. We walked to the graveyard was a bit cold. We got there when it was starting to be bright probably was 6am Yeap that's how far it was. Zuko led me to my

mom's Grave. I got there and just kneeled before the grave busy running my hand on the sand. Tears were close to falling. I wish that Me and her had made peace while she was still alive.

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 24 BROKEN SOUL

Going to my mom's grave brought me all the closure i needed, although me and her might never get a chance to fix what happened between us, but at least i could make her proud by changing my life and try to chase my dreams. Not only will i make my mom proud, but also i would make Uche proud wherever he is, because he died for me to change my life and i wanna make it a point that somehow I make him proud. Living with Luzuko and Mpumi was very nice i enjoyed every moment i spent with them. Zuko never complained about borrowing me her clothes or me sharing in on their food but i really wanted to do something to help maybe get a job.

.....
Sunday came and Zuko said we should go to church. It was weird for me to go to church because Im not sure if God likes me or not and i wasn't ready for the gossip.

Me: do i really have to go to church?

Her: Yes, you know that's what your mom would've wanted.

Me: I'm only going because I'm honoring her legacy.

Her: whether you honoring her legacy or not Ill just be happy that you going to church. We bathe and got dressed, she borrowed me one of her dresses and sandals. Her shoes were a bit bigger but hey what can i do? I have no choice. After we got dressed we had morvate for breakfast, she took her Bible and we made our way to church while i had Mpumi on my back. We got there and the service was just about to start. I wasn't very happy about being there because i know how those people are gonna gossip about me and not coming to my mom's funeral, and even though my face was healing but the skin was now peeling off so ya you can imagine how i looked. Sis mazet noticed me sitting at the back and she came to hug me then asked if we can talk in private. I stood up and we went outside.

Her: It's good to see you again Nissi

Me: It's good to be back.

Her: How are you mara ntombazana?

Me: I'm hanging in there sis Mazet.

She held my hand.

Her: Trust in God you'll be okay, and we miss you in the choir.

Me: i miss you guys too.

Her: so what are you busy with in the meantime?

Me: Nothing sis mazet it's even hard to get a job.

Her: Speaking of a job, yazi my sister uDora she is working for this other rich people as their maid and the last time i talked to her she said they looking for another maid.

Me being a maid? I don't think so.

Me: Thank you sis mazet but i don't think that's the best job for me, Maids work hard but earn peanuts and I'm still young Touching water all the time i can even have arthritis at a later stage.

Her: I'm not saying be a maid for the rest of your life, just work there so you can make enough money to go back to school, Phela i did mention that they rich.

One thing i don't like about Sis Mazet is that she forces.

Her: come follow me to my chair and I'll give you her numbers.

We went back inside and she wrote me her sister's numbers, then whispered in my ear.

Her: Please do call her.

I smiled at her and walked away. I got to my chair and put the paper inside Zuko's Bible. The service was great the Pastor preached about God being the God of restoration. After church I decided to go to the Pastor I wanted to thank him for paying for my mom's funeral. I walked up to him when he was done talking to other people and he said we should sit on the chairs. We went and sat down.

Him: How are you my child?

Me: I'm fine thanks pastor and how are you?

Him: nami ngiyaphila (I'm also fine).

Me: I just wanted to thank you for paying for my mom's funeral pastor, making sure that my mom is buried the right way.

Him: Thank the Lord my child, and speaking of your mom she was a very kind woman the church was happy to contribute.

I looked down

Me: She was indeed a kind woman.

Pastor: You look like there's something that's bothering you.

Me: I am just deeply saddened that I couldn't attend her funeral Pastor, I was too consumed by Anger and the things of this world then in turn they ended up hurting me, I feel like I have failed my mother and God.

Pastor: Sometimes in life things have to happen in certain ways to show us 2 things. 1. They show us God's greatness and 2. They teach us important lessons. I don't know what you did and why you did it, but what I can say is Forgive yourself because God has already forgiven you, and your mom I know that she has forgiven you too.

Tears were ready to fall down but I was trying to hold them back.

Me: What has happened to me pastor was very cruel I'm sure my face proves everything.

Him: I just see a woman who conquered situations that could've easily killed her. You are actually stronger than you think Nissi, and these scars? Don't look at them and think about what you went through. Don't let these scars remind you of your pain, but instead let them remind you of how situations came and how you Conquered them, you are a true conquerer.

Me: Thank you pastor, I guess I needed to hear that

Tears were streaming down now.

Pastor: Close your eyes and let's pray.

The Pastor prayed for me that can God give me the strength I need to keep on living and that may He heal all my pain and show me mercy for my sins. He also prayed that may God bless Me for all the good I've done for my mom.

Yes the Pastor knew that I was taking care of my mom while she was sick.

After the prayer, I said my goodbyes to the Pastor and went to Zuko. We started walking home

Her: was a great service today neh?

Me: it was indeed.

I wasn't fully committed to this conversation I gave a one word answer.

Zuko: What's wrong you look distracted?

Me: Sis'Mazet, she thinks that it will be better if I go and work with her sister as a maid.

Her: And I guess you don't like that?

Me: imagine me as a maid Zuko

Her: I heard that Sis'Mazet sister works for a rich family, might be a great opportunity

for you and besides it's not like you gonna work there your entire life, just do it and get the cash. It will be a great start for you Nissi.

Me: Why do i get the feeling that you trying to kick me out?

She laughed.

Her: that's not true Chomp. I just want you to get a fresh start away from here and everything that has happened.

Maybe Zuko was right i probably do need a fresh start away from here and start In a place were no one knows me.

We got to The shack and ate, wasn't the best meal was rice and tomato sauce with chicken that she came back with from work. We ate and just chilled indoors the whole day.....

.....
The next day when Zuko left for work, i woke up and bathe Mpumi then went and dropped her off at day care. I came back and went to fetch water then boiled and bathe too. I took the paper with the numbers and looked at it. I can work for this people to make more money and then go back to school, rather than sitting here and lazing around all day. I took the paper and searched for coins at Zuko's place i found R2. I walked a long distance to the public phones they were mad far! I got there and called her, she picked up.

Her: Hello, uDora okhulumayo (it's Dora speaking)

I didn't know what to say but i had to say something the R2 was gonna finish

Me: Hello sis Dora. Ukhuluma no Nissi (you speaking to Nissi) i got your number from Sis'Mazet

Her: Yes she told me about you.

Me: She told me about the job offer, and i accept it if it still stands.

Her: Good, good, because my employers were even giving up on finding a new maid. Can you come tomorrow so you can start soon.

The phone was making the beeping sound as if like to warn me that my R2 is finishing.

Me: i would love too but i have no money and i don't know...

Her: Don't worry I'll ask mazet to fetch you, be ready by 8am

Me: Okay tell her to fetch me at Zuko's house.

Then i heard silence.

Me: Hello? Sis Dora?

The stupid phone had cut, did she even hear me. I walked out and went back home, when i was approaching the supermarket My worst enemy was standing by the door. It's a Monday why ain't he at school? I walked fast but he noticed me and he came running to me and calling my name. I ignored him but when he had finally caught up with me, he grabbed me by my hand and turned me around to face him, he freaked out when he saw me.

Him: Yeses! What happened to your face?

Me: What do you want Lindo?

Him: i thought you'd still be at jozi nales'gora Sakho!

Me: Well you thought wrong!

I started walking away.

Him: Nissi don't walk away I'm still talking! Don't forget i still have the sex tape.

Me: Yooh please release it! Ngafa amaThreats akho!

Him: You think i won't do it?

Me: Whether you release it or not i don't care! Do what's gonna make you happy!

I left him there while he was busy on his phone, i don't know whether he was distributing my sex tape or not Kodwa i didn't care anymore!

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 25 BROKEN SOUL

I truly hope that this job situation works out because that's the only thing I have now and the only thing that should save me from this life. What was more sad about the situation was that, i won't get to say goodbye to my mother and i don't know when I'm gonna visit her grave again. The biggest problem about this was that i don't have clothes, and i have only one underwear that i have to wash every night and Wear it in the morning. I was pacing up and down in Zuko's shack trying to figure out what to do next.....

Time came for me to fetch Mpumi from daycare and i started walking there to fetch her. Mpumi is an introvert child, she hardly engages In any conversation. I picked her up and we walked back home. We got there and i made her rice and nespray, she didn't really care about what she eats. I let her play around while i tidied the shack did a bit of cleaning here and there, was the least i could do for Zuko after how she has helped me. I also cooked Pap and lucky star fish. When it was getting late Mpumi and i ate then after i bathe her and put her in bed. Zuko came back at 20:00 looking very exhausted.

Me: Yooh chomp you look tired as hell.

Her: don't even mention it.

She was leaning against the door, after closing it.

Me: Sit down I'll make you something to eat

Her: No thank you chomp I ate at work. Is Mpumi sleeping?

Me: Yaa she Is.

Her: Thank you for helping me out with her.

Me: i really didn't mind and she's a very sweet baby, although you'll have to find yourself a new Nanny.

She looked at me as if like what am i talking about?

Me: i accepted the maid job and I'm leaving tomorrow.

Her eyes opened wide.

Her: Wow chomp, really?

Me: Yes.

Her: I'm happy for you.

Me: Thank you, and do you have airtime?

Her: i think so

Me: do you have Sis'Mazet phone numbers?

Her: Ya check on my phone.

She handed me her phone and i searched for Sis'Mazet's numbers then i called her to tell her that she should pick me up at Zuko's place she agreed but now we was gonna leave at 6am.

When i was finished with the call i gave Zuko her phone back.

Then started thinking.

Her: ucabangani kangaka? (what are you thinking off)

Me: Eish I'm stressed over the fact that i have no clothes.

Her: ya eish that's a situation but i can give you some of my clothes and a R500 to atleast buy underwears.

Me: No chomp you cannot do that, you've done so much for me already.

Her: but you need help chomp and I'm helping you.

Me: Where would I be without you?

Her: probably in Jozi still prostituting.

We laughed at that. We went to pack up a few clothes gave me a small bag and a few clothes, then gave me R500 ontop. I really was grateful for Having a friend such as Zuko she had the heart of a dove. I bathe that night thoroughly so that the following day i don't do much of bathing. We went to bed. Laid there thinking about Uche and Jito and all that has happened to me, i was thinking about my mom and Fanny, Omg Fanny what happened to her? And i can't even contact her especially since its risky. I cried myself to sleep because i wasn't taking my Antidepressants anymore so my depression would come and go.....

I woke up the following day did some small water and bathe. Zuko woke up.

Me: did i wake you up?

Her: No i wanted to see you off

I wore a summer dress with sandals because that was the only thing of hers that fit me her dresses.....

We waited for Sis'Mazet and she did come at 6am. I hugged Zuko very tight me and her shed a few tears was hard leaving my best friend behind. Sis'Mazet and i made it to her old Tata indica car and drove off. I can't believe that i was leaving everything again.. We drove until we made it to town then i bought shoes and underwears with the R500 Sis'Mazet helped in buying me toiletries and sanitary towels and everything else that i would need. We went to spur and bought their breakfast that cost R25.

Her: Are you anxious about the job? And moving into a whole new different area.

Me: Yes i am but i think change is good.

We ate and then drove again to that place i didn't know.....

The place was between Pta and jhb, we drove up to this huuuuge house that stood alone in an abandoned area. There were no other houses around and it was separated from the roads and town and other houses it was standing alone with just bushes surrounding it. The distance from the gate to the house was ridiculous. We went up to the gate and i saw a sign of some sort written "Thobakgale residence", the security guards at the gate didn't give us a tough time after signing some book and presenting our IDs they opened the gate for us. This family was sure rich i mean at some certain point i thought that the security guards were soldiers because of their uniform and all the guns they were holding. We drove up to the house and my word, I've never seen anything like this, it was like i was going into a hotel or something of some sort. We Parked at the driveway close to the door and sis mazet called her sister... The sister came to us after a few minutes. She did not look like your typical maid she had that maid uniform but hers was black, she looked like the tryphina type because i use to watch Muvhango at my sister's place. She looked a bit old like was on her 40s. She hugged both me and sis mazet, then sis mazet told her to take care of me and she promised to call me because i had bought me a cheap black and white screen phone that cost R150. Sis mazet gave me a hug and left. I was sad and scared Phela I'm now alone with people that i ain't know. Dora took my bag and put her hand around my shoulders.

Her: Let's go to the pool house first.

We walked to the pool house at the back and Wow it was very beautiful. Had a kitchen, lounge and bedroom, the bedroom was big. If a pool house can look this good i imagine how the house looks like.

Me: Wow this place is beautiful, and the house is big

Her: i know we call it a "Mansion"

We put the bag away and walked to the house and oh my, oh my, oh my... I asked myself at first that am i walking into the white house or what because this place was out of this world. I looked around busy doing slow turns. I saw an Indian woman making her way to us. She was beautiful with long black hair mara vele Indians are beautiful. She had a slim body and was wearing a red&Gold Sarie, with alot of Gold jewellery she had a big round earring on her nose and had that red dot thing on her forehead. I saw Dora trying to touch her toes but the woman smiled and stopped her.

Dora: Madam this is the girl I've been telling you about.

She smiled at me.

Dora: Nissi this is the Madam of this house Madam Rasheeda Krupa-Thobekgale.

I was expecting a hug or handshake but she put her hands together like she was gonna drop the most powerful prayer ever then bent her head a bit. I looked at her I've never seen such perfection, This woman was beautiful with brown eyes, small beautiful lips, Gosh ya neh.

Rasheeda: Do you have your Cv?

She had that Indian accent, and her voice was so calm.

Me: Cv?

Her: Yes I'm gonna need your Cv.

Who applies with a Cv to be a maid

Dora: we'll have that fixed in the morning Madam.

She smiled at Dora then Walked away.

Dora gave me a bit of a tour of the house, i mean this house needs at least 5 Maids. She showed me the cleaning materials, expensive machines etc.

Dora: Tomorrow we'll do your Cv first then she will have to interview you and if she likes you then you'll be hired.

Me: Yooh and if she doesn't like me?

Dora: She will like you.

Although I wasn't working yet mara i helped Dora around with a few things. It was now 16:00 and Dora asked me to take out the dishes from the dishwasher while she puts some groceries inside the fridge. Madam Rasheeda came to the kitchen while on her phone, but hung up after a few seconds all smiling.

Dora: Madam looks happy.

Madam: i am very, very happy you won't believe whose on his way home

Dora: Who?

Madam: My moon pie, ohh Dora i can't wait to see him I've missed him alot.

Dora was smiling too

Dora: that is good news Madam i cannot wait to see him too, should i fix the bedroom

Madam: No I'll do it.

She walked upstairs.

Dora: That's her son she's talking about.

Ehh mina i thought it was her husband.

Dora: His coming home today from overseas. He plays for some soccer team in America i think. I don't really know this sports things.

After that we went to prepare the table was putting dishes etc

Dora: Make sure you set everything accordingly, follow my lead because Madam doesn't like a disorganised place.

Aii Madam Is gonna be a problem. Rasheeda came rushing downstairs holding after an hour or so and holding her sarie.

Madam: Dora his here, he just arrived.

Dora left what she was busy with, hmmm i really need to see this person they worshipping. We stood there and he came in. Whoa! Ya Jesu come back please to save me this brother was, he was... Wait I'm still trying to find the right words.

He was a bit tall, was wearing grey pants that looked like they were made from a demin fabric, was wearing a long grey t-shirt but it was a bit above knee level, it was a short sleeved shirt, and grey sneakers he also had stud Diamond earrings. His clothes was a label that i didn't know had an owl and underneath that owl had this words "Fresh boys" he was carrying a grey back pack too. I couldn't see his face he was looking down on his phone and was wearing a grey hat that hid him a bit Yeap he was wearing grey everything. He had dreadlocks that were a bit long and nicely laid at the back. Rasheeda went crazy.

Madam: Moon pie!

He raised up his head and looked at his mom and yoooo ya neh i have to create a word that will describe him because "hot" doesn't even come close. He wasn't a yellow bone, wasn't dark he had a fair skin colour, brown beautiful eyes that weren't big or small they were just normal. He had a bit of side burns, and a lil beard on his chin. He smiled at his mom and it was a beautiful side smile that revealed his shallow dimples. He touched his mother's toes then went up to hug his mother. Rasheeda was now crying ya he must be a mamas boy.

Yazi i stood there starring at this nigga with my mouth slightly opened, i wasn't even hearing what was said i was just starring at his sexy lips that kept on moving and his side smile, and how he was hugging his mom and wiping her tears, yazi this was the definition of a true hot guy. I felt some hotness come in my abdominal area, such guy must be dating Beyonce i swear. Yazi i still stood there starring at him trying to figure out if such person exists for real and trying not to blink. Ya mara i forgive him for looking this hot because his mom is Wow too. Shame abanye abo mama bayazala langaphandle (other women do give birth out there) I'd also worship him if i had him, mara nje ke suicide fela if we break up, and I'm gonna have a lot of run ins with other girls.

PART 26 BROKEN SOUL

Aii shame this brother Is hot.

Dora: Look at you, all grown up.

Him: Listen to you right now.

They laughed. His voice was smooth and seductive if i could put it like like that.

Dora: come and hug your old woman.

He went up to Dora and hugged her. Dora was standing close to me so i could smell his cologne. He went to stand next to his mom and looked at me, i looked down.

Him: And then?

Rasheeda: ohh Moon pie that is our new helper, well she will be our new helper if she passes the interview tomorrow, her name is....

Me: Bennice but they call me Nissi.

Rasheeda: And Bennice meet my one and only Son Tshepiso but Dora and i call him moon pie,his the moon pie of this house.

Him: I'm not 4 anymore mom, I'm 22

Rasheeda: You'll always be my moon pie.

She said that while squeezing his cheek.

Him: Can i go and lie down? I'm very tired

Rasheeda: Yes and i have cleaned your room.

They went upstairs holding hands.

Him: You the best.

Dora and i continued with what we were doing.

Me: They pretty close aren't they?

Dora: They very close. Rasheeda loves her son more than anything in this world, his her heart

Me: His lucky, not every child gets to be loved like that..

Dora: Speaking from personal experience?

Me: No my mom loved me, i just didn't have much time with her.

Dora: Why is that?

Me: She died not so long ago.

Dora: I'm sorry to hear that.

Me: It's okay.

Rasheeda came back.

Rasheeda: Dora there's no towels in Tshepi's bathroom would you kindly put some..

Dora: Yes Madam.

Rasheeda:Leave it because you still busy, Bennice would you please go and put towel's In my son's bathroom. It's the first room on the first floor.

Me: And where are the towels?

Her: They are in his closet.

What the hack? How far is the closet to the bathroom? He Is sure spoiled.

I walked up to his room, i knocked but no answer he was playing music. I went in and his room was neat and beautiful. Grey was the colour which now I'm starting to think it's his favourite colour. I searched for the closet his room was just complicated. I was busy looking around and i heard a voice behind me saying "Can i help you" i slowly turned around and Gosh! He was shirtless, was only wearing his pants which were sagged a bit revealing his boy shorts which was written "Fresh boyz" in the elastic part of it. He stood there with his hands folded. He had a tattoo of fire flames that extended from his belly button and his body Lord have mercy that six pack. My eyes made their way from his body to his face. He took off his hat and untied his dreads wich were dangling now and yaa he was actually hotter than i thought because earlier i couldn't see him very clear with his hat.

Him: i said can i help you?

Me: I. I'm supposed to get towels, something like that.

You know when you come across a hot person and your brain shuts down, you end up not knowing what to say and that is what was happening to me, and i was very nervous. He pointed at his closet.

Him: They there.

I walked to the closet my legs were dragging. I got there and he had a huge closet with alot of clothes i thought i was walking inside a clothing shop. What was weird is that all his clothes were grey, black, or white and no other colour. All of them had the owl thing and written "Fresh boyz" i looked around his sneakers were those 3 colors too, same goes with his hats. The closet had a small couch as if like you seat there when you wanna fit shoes. He walked In after a few minutes.

Him: I thought you died because those towels are taking forever to come.

Hebanna! His ego is big.

Him: look Nia i don't have time to be teaching you where everything is, it's not my job.

Nia? Really?

Me: Uhm my name is Nissi

Him: What?

Me: My name is Nissi not Nia.

Him: do i look like a give a flying colours?

Haibo this spoilt mama's boy is arrogant! Me and him we not gonna get along.

Him: Again why is my mother hiring you?

I didn't say anything just stood there.

Him: I'll get the damn towels myself.

He went to open some cabinet and got the towels. He had a huge tattoo of a lion's face on his back. He got the towels and walked to the door then after stopped and took a deep breath.

Him: Now must i tell you to get out of my room?

I started walking out, and he went to the bathroom.

Mxm he ain't know who his talking too i swear. I went back to Dora and tried to help her..

Dora: Go and help Madam at the kitchen.

I walked up to the kitchen, she was cooking.

Her: Thank God you came, please peel those Veges for me.

I started with the carrots then after diced them, she came up to me.

Her: No pumpkin that's not how i want them diced, peel other ones and I'll show you how to dice them. I peeled other ones and then she came to dice them exactly how i diced them.

Her: That's how I want them diced, yours were a bit big mine are small.

I swear this woman has what we call an O.C.D. i continued peeling the veges for her.

Her: And pumpkin i won't be able to interview you tomorrow, just organise your Cv it doesn't matter if it doesn't have all your qualifications, as long as it has your ID copy then im happy.

Me: Yes Madam I'll do that.

Her: And know that i don't like dishonest people, i don't like people who are not reliable and people who steal. My last helper use to steal from us.

Me: I promise i won't steal.

Her: Then congratulations you got the job, and you come highly recommended by Dora. I trust Dora, so i hope that I'll trust you too.

We continued cooking and i kinda liked helping her she was a very kind woman. When we were done we took the food to the table.

Rasheeda: Sit down pumpkin, we eat as a family here and you the part of the family now.

I sat down with her then Dora came to join us.

Dora: Isn't Tshepi coming to eat with us?

Rasheeda: I don't know, can you please go and call him pumpkin?

I can't believe that i have to do this shit again!

Just when i stood up he came down. He sat next to his mother.

Rasheeda: Nice of you to join us.

He didn't say anything he dished up and we also dished up.

Rasheeda: i thought you were playing this weekend.

Him: was supposed to play

Her: so why ain't you playing? what happened?

Him: You don't want me here anymore?

Her: That's not what i meant

Him: i know it's not, I'm just kidding. Anyway i got myself in a bit of hot water and got suspended.

I saw Rasheeda putting down her fork and knife down.

Rasheeda: You got suspended again! What for this time?

Him: Punching my opponent, didn't you watch the game?

Rasheeda: Ohhh moon pie I always tell you about this temper of yours.

Him: He started it.

Rasheeda: Your father is not gonna be happy about this.

Tshep: Fuck him, i don't care!

Dora: Don't say that especially after he paid soo much money for you to be in that team.

Tshepiso's mood changed he got pissed.

Him: And fuck you too!

Rasheeda: Moon pie..

Tshepi: I fucken hate that statement! I got picked to play in that team because I'm fucken good! I'm a good player! I didn't get there because of my dad's money, so yall gotta stop with that shit!

Yerrr iyadelela lengane (this child is disrespectful).

He stood up

Rasheeda: where are you going?

Him: I'm going to my fucken room sheeda!

Rasheeda: I'm sure Dora didn't mean to upset you, she was just talking.

Him: That's too late she already did upset me!

He started walking but then stopped.

Him: And next time sheeda, don't just hire people from the streets! Do a proper background check on the person first! This ain't a house for broke bitches!

Then after he gave Dora an irritated look, clicked his tongue and walked upstairs. There was silence for a while, no one dared to say anything. After a while Dora said can she be excused and she went to the pool house. That was an awkward moment. Rasheeda tried Eating but i saw that she was struggling.

Rasheeda: i won't be around tomorrow, so please tell Dora that she don't have to do a lot, you guys can knock off early.

She stood up and walked upstairs, i also went to the pool house, and i found Dora crying. She tried wiping her tears fast so i couldn't see that she was crying.

Her: we'll share the bed dear.

Me: Are you alright?

Her: I'll be fine don't worry.

I bathe then went to bed. That boy was full of himself I'm not gonna allow him to intimidate me like that.....

We woke up in the morning, bathe and wore our uniform then went to start with work. Dora said i can start by putting last night's dishes in the dishwasher. I went and cleared the table then put dishes in the dishwasher. Tshepiso came down he was wearing a black muscle vest, black sweat pants, and black sleepers. He didn't tie his dreads and he

was wearing an iconic silver chain that had an engraved pendant. He sat down at the kitchen counter with his big Samsung tablet. Dora said i should go and make him breakfast, but i should ask him what he wants first. She's really putting me in a tight spot. I walked up to him and just stood opposite him. When he noticed me his eyes went up to look at me.

Him: What?

Me: i was wondering if you hungry.

What was i saying!

Him: You were wondering?

This guy made me nervous, he made my knees weak. I tried to regain my composure.

Me: Would you like something to eat?

Him: No i doubt you can make me something to eat.

Me: Try me.

Him: Okay

He put his Tab aside, put his hands up to his mouth with his elbows leaning on the counter for support.

Him: i want an Apple-Cheddar Chicken Tartine with Honey-Dijon Roasted Potatoes and drop the cheddar.

Okay what the hell did he say!

He took his Tab and was on it again. I still stood there. He looked at me again.

Him: What now?

Me: Can we try a less complicated breakfast?

Him: Just get out of my face!

I started walking but turned back, i wasn't gonna let him talk to me like that!

I went back to him.

Me: You know what! I may be a maid, i may be broke but that doesn't give you the right to talk to me like that!

He put his Tab aside and looked at me with that same gesture of his hands on his mouth and elbows on the counter.

Me: You can talk to Dora like that, you can even talk to your mother like that! But Please never ever in your life talk to me like that ever again! If you want me to respect you, then you should respect Me too!

I can't believe i said that im probably gonna lose my job.

He looked at me for a while that was intimidating.

Him: Are you done?

Me: i believe so!

Him: i would like some orange juice and a fruit salad please. Make sure the fruit salad is cold.

Okay that was weird.

I went up to the fridge and the fruit salad was already prepared. I poured juice for him, and put the fruit salad in a bowl, put everything in a tray and went to give him.

He put his Tab aside.

Him: Thank you, that will be all.

He started eating and i walked out all confused, what just happened?

PART 27 BROKEN SOUL

Dora and i cleaned here and there, it was easy to clean with all those vacuums and other cleaning machines. When we were done cleaning Dora said we should go to town and get a few things and also do my CV. We went to Pta town because it was the one that was the closest to us. We had a driver that drove us there. We bought a few clothes from this other Chinese shop had some cheap clothes we also went to those Nigerian salons they took out my weave and relaxed my hair i burned a bit but it was worth it my hair was getting longer. When we were done we went to do my CV then went to get something to eat at chicken lickin'.

Me: Thank you for the clothes sis Dora and getting my hair relaxed.

Her: It's okay My dear. So how are you finding your new job?

Me: It's good i like Rasheeda she's a sweetheart, and i can't say much about her Son.

Dora: Ya i know.

Me: Why does he act like that though?

Dora: Because his parents are rich, so he thinks that he owns the world.

Me: Someone needs to put him in his place, plus i don't like how he talked to you last night.

Dora: Unfortunately there was nothing i can say i mean if his own mother can't discipline him then who am i to do so?

Me: Ya you probably right.

I am soo gonna teach this boy how to behave, me and him we gonna have it down hard. Sis Dora and i finished eating and went to the pharmacy she got me some cream for my face. My face wasn't that bad looking anymore just a few dark spots that needed to clear.

Her: You never really told me what happened to your face

Me: someone poured hot water on me.

Her: that's not right did you get the person arrested?

Me: Yes that i did

Her: Then that's good.

When we were done we went home. We spent almost all morning there, it was very good getting some fresh air.

We got home and went to put our clothes in the pool house.

I wore my uniform again.

Dora said we must go and prepare what we gonna cook for supper

Me: Where is Miss Rasheeda i haven't seen her today

Dora: She went to visit her mother.

Me: Where Does Her mother stay?

Dora: Durban

Me: Ohw when is she coming back?

Dora: Later today

Me: She went today? And coming back today?

Her: Yes they have a private plane

Me: That explains it.

Dora: You know your work, off load dishes from the dishwasher while i go and tidy up and put laundry in the laundry room.

I started taking out the dishes and the door opened. It was Tshepiso and he was with some 2 other guys who also had dreadlocks. They all had the same outfit just different colours. His was all black, the other one his was all white and the last one his was all grey. All their outfits were written "Fresh Boyz" they had hats on and their dreads laid back. They came and sat at kitchen counter, Tshepiso got some can of monster energy drinks from the fridge and gave them. Really they was gonna seat In the same room that i was at? Couldn't they find another place to seat. I mean you know how hard it is to be in the same room with 3 hot guys. They started holding down a convo and i was

listening.

Guy1: So what happened to you last night T-Pee? Thought you was gonna join us at the club

Tshepi: had to come back and be with the family first you know the drill, but I'm down for tonight.

Guy2: That's dope Dog because i really want us to shut the club down.

Tshepi: Which club was it that you guys went too?

Guy1: some club at Hatfield that one we went too Dog and you started shit with the bouncer

Tshepi: Ohh ya i remember! I hate that club dog!

Guy2: What pissed you off that day?

Tshepi: That fucked up shit of a bouncer wanted to search me, like what the fuck man! I hate when people do that! That's why i ain't make it out that easy at the airport

Guy1: That shit is fucked up man.

Tshepi: Like what the fuck you check me for? I ain't trying to steal nothing or bringing nothing! I'm rich i ain't even gotta trip like that!

I was Rolling my eyes like seriously?

Guy2: But fuck that! A situation popped up

Guy1: What situation?

Guy2: Remember that girl i fucked in the club that time?

Guy1: Which girl?

Guy2: that girl who was busy eyeing me dog.

T-Pee: That one with big tits?

Guy2: That one. Can yall believe that she called me a few days back telling me that she's Pregnant.

Guy1: Wtf! I'm sure you told that bitch to abort.

Guy2: i did dog i gave her R2000 to abort i mean i ain't raising no baby I'm still a baby! I'm fucken 21 there's a lot of tities that i wanna smash before playing daddy!

T-Pee: And it's gonna taint the Fresh Boyz brand.

I couldn't believe what i was hearing, that just made me mad was this boy for real?

Me: Son of a sea biscuit!!!!

I clicked my tongue then continued with what i was doing then noticed that the room went silent. I looked at them and they were looking at me.

Guy1: Wanna say something?

I shook my head no.

T-Pee: anyway did she end up doing the abortion?

Guy2: Naa bitch said that's against her morals and shit, as if like i give a fuck about that.

Guy1: She keeps the baby, then she gots to raise it up alone.

T-Pee: Exactly dog!

Vele none of them has what we call a "brain"

Guy2: But screw that! I found me another bitch i wanna smash

T-Pee: Is she worth smashing?

Guy2: a bit. I mean she's not my kinda girl but she has nice titties!

Guy1: Ain't none dope like a bitch with a full blast pair of titties

T-Pee: i wouldn't know that because my last bitch had none of that.

They laughed.

Me: MotherF*****!!!!

I was fuming now!

Guy1: I think we should bounce dog

Guy2: Yeah I think so too.

T-Pee: Ayt yall keep calm I'll see you cats at Zanzu

Guy1: Says a cat that's driving a golf 8.

They laughed.

T-Pee: Don't fucken do that to me dog, you don't know how poor i feel right now!

Guy1: When is daddy getting you a new pair of wheels?

T-Pee: He got me a mustang still waiting for that shit to be delivered

Guy1: Ayt Dog we'll pick you up at 20:00 can't be showing up with No Golf 8, Gonna taint the brand.

T-Pee: You flashing because daddy got you a Ferrari, i see you dog!

They laughed and did those gangster handshakes then the two niggas left.

I was soo mad that i was just throwing the dishes,which irritated Tshepiso after a while.

Him: If you got something to say, just say it don't take it out on the poor dishes they did nothing wrong! So do you have anything to say?

I ignored him. Then after like a minute or so i decided to speak my mind.

Me: i don't know why men have to be dogs!

Him: Excuse me?

Me: no I'm not gonna excuse you! I heard what you and your boys were talking about! Forcing the poor girl to get an abortion, like really? If your friend didn't want a baby then he shouldve used a condom!

He was starring at me, although i was mad but his cuteness got to me.

Me: Men are dogs for real! That's why Ima forever stay single yall are DOGS!!!

Him: Damn, who said try us all?

Me: What?

Him: If all men are dogs? Then you ought to have tried them all!

He said that and walked upstairs. I held one dish tight, this guy was really testing my patience.

I went and got a glass of water to drink,i really wanted to calm down.

I wasn't feeling good anymore think i that being too angry made me sick.i went to ask Sis Dora if i can go and lie down a bit she said i can go and lie down she will come and give me pain killers. I thanked her and went to the pool house. I took a long bath that made me relax took a bit of tension from my body. I got out of the bath after 10min and went to dress up. I lotioned then put on my underwear. I heard the door opening and closing behind me, at least sis Dora was back to give me pills. I turned around.

Me: Sis Do...

And to my surprise it wasn't Dora it was Tshepiso what the fuck was he doing here? He froze when he saw me and his eyes went to my breasts. I covered them with my hands and ran to the bathroom,and closed the door behind me.

Him: Dora said i should come and drop some pain killers for you, so I'm just gonna leave them here on the bed.

Then after a while i heard the door closing, that took him long enough to leave. I got out and went to clothe, then i noticed a note next to the pack of pain killers,and it was written "Dope Titties, Nini" i clicked my tongue and squashed it.

PART 28 BROKEN SOUL

I put on my night gown, ate a sandwich, drank the pain killers and went to bed. I didn't immediately fall asleep i went down memory lane, i missed Uche, i missed my mom, was Fan alright? Did Gao go to jail? I felt tears falling, after a while i found myself crying and holding my pillow tight then i fell asleep, i didn't even hear Dora coming to bed.....

I woke up in the morning, and checked the time i was late. I went to quickly bath then put on my uniform and rushed to the house. I was surprised to see Dora, Rasheeda, and Tshepi standing at the kitchen, think they were waiting for me, what did i do? My heart was pumping fast.

Tshepi signalled that we should go to the lounge, we all and sat down on the couch.

Tshepi: Good morning guys, thank you for availing yourselves at such notice because this meeting is important.

He looked at me.

Tshepi: There's something we need to discuss that i really don't like.

Me: if it's about me coming late im very sorry, i had a bit of a rough night.

Tshepi: You forgiven Dora told us that you sick.

Rasheeda: Then why did you call this meeting?

He took some plastics from the table, gave one to Dora and another one to me.

Him: I'm changing your uniforms, the ones you wearing are old.

We took out the uniforms they were black and white.

Tshepi: We call that a French maid uniform.

Dora tried hers right there, she wore it ontop of her old uniform.

Dora: i like it, it's beautiful.

It was just a black long dress with what seemed to be a white Apron at the front.

Dora: let me go and take off my old uniform and put on the new one. Thank you Moon pie.

Tshepi: You welcome.

Dora went to the pool house.

Me: I probably should try mine too.

Him: Ya uhm you have to try yours in private.

He looked at his mom.

Rasheeda: You know i just remembered that i have to do something, i will see you.

She stood up and walked out.

Me: Okay I'll go and try it at the pool house.

I started walking out and he stopped me by grabbing my hand.

Him: wait.

I looked at his hand, he let go.

Him: i was thinking that you can go and change in my room.

Me: why?

Him: It's more closer, the pool house is far.

I looked at him.

Me: Fine but you wait here.

Him: You sure that you don't need some help?

Me: I'll be fine.

The door bell rang.

Him: Okay go and change while i get the door.

He walked to the door while i went to change in his room. My uniform came with a lot of things such as stockings, a lil hat, heels, and the dress. I wore the stockings first they were fish net stockings, then put on the dress which was very tight and short. It was open at the top revealing my cleavage had no zip or buttons in that area. I put on the hat and heels which were kind of small. I went to look myself in the mirror and i looked like

a serious hooker. I went downstairs and he was all chatting with his friend waiting for me and as soon as they saw me, they kept quiet and looked at me. I stood in front of them with my hands on my waist.

Tshepi: Wow you look...

Friend: Like a fine piece of ass!

Tshepi: Doesn't she have the Rihanna type of body dog?

Friend: Fuck that Dog! Look at her chest!

Me: This is your idea of the new uniform?

Him: This ain't just any uniform, this is a French maid uniform!

Friend: You can make my breakfast everyday sweetie with that sexy good looking body.

Me: don't you have a baby to raise? Last time i heard you impregnated someone!

The friend looked at me then looked at Tshepi.

Friend: Let me bounce dog, I'll see you!

Tshepi: Ayt man be cool.

They did that handshake thing again and the friend left. I gave Tshepi a serious look then clicked my tongue and went upstairs, with him following me.

Him: I don't understand why you mad

Me: You make me look like a hooker! I am not a hooker!

That uniform brought a bit of bad memories, it brought back the prostitution memories.

Me: I'm not a prostitute!

I took off the uniform, i didn't care if he saw my naked body i mean he saw me naked yesterday.

Him: That's not what i tried to do.

I put on my old uniform and walked out, he grabbed me by my hand and i slapped him.

He looked at me as if like he didn't believe that i slapped him, i also couldn't believe.

Me: And don't ever show me off like that to your friends! Such a bunch of perverts sies!

I walked out, now i was tearing up. I went to cry a bit outside, what he did was not cool.

I went back inside to clean.

Dora came to help me.

Dora: Why ain't you wearing your uniform?

Me: i don't like it

Her: too bad, i like mine.

We continued cleaning and Rasheeda came to us.

Rasheeda: Bennice did you do your Cv?

Me: Yes Mam' i can go fetch it for you.

Her: Please do because my husband is coming home tomorrow and i have to show him your Cv.

Dora dropped the spray that she was holding.

Dora: Mr Vic is coming home tomorrow?

Rasheeda: Yes he just called me.

Dora: while Tshepiso is here?

Rasheeda shrugged her shoulders

Dora: did you tell him about Tshepiso getting suspended?

Rasheeda looked at me

Rasheeda: Let's not talk about that.

She put her hand on her forehead.

Rasheeda: It's a bit hot in here, aren't you guys feeling hot?

Dora: No mam'

Rasheeda: let me go and get some cool air, and Bennice don't forget to give me that Cv.

Me: Yes mam'

She Walked away.

Me: What was that all about?

Dora: You don't wanna know.

We continued cleaning while i was busy asking myself what's going on in this family.

After I was done i went to offload the dishwasher...Ts

hepiso walked in looking hot as Always. He cleared his throat and i stood up to look at him.

Him: Nini look..

Me: It's Nissi!

He gave me that side smile of his.

Him: I think Nini suits you well.

I gave him a serious look.

Him: I seriously don't understand why you mad

Me: Then we have nothing to discuss

Him: i was appreciating your sexy body Nini!

I thought of Gao at that moment and i got pissed then took out dishes and threw them at him.

Me: I'm not gonna let you do that to me! I was sexually violated once and I'm not gonna let that happen again!

I was now in tears.

Him: What the hell are you talking about?

I kept on throwing dishes at him and he was ducking. There was no dishes left so i got hold of the pot.

Him: if you throw that at me im gonna hit you, because that thing is gonna hurt me.

He was not gonna do that, i always get away with starting fights especially with niggas, and they let me get away with it.

I threw the pot at him and he tried to protect himself by blocking it with his arm, it hit his arm hard that i think i heard his bones breaking, and he held his arm busy saying "Shit" he was in pain. He looked at me all pissed and came to my direction, i think he gave me 3 claps that really made me to see a bit of stars, i put my hand on my cheek.

Him: What the fuck is wrong with you?

I probably shouldn't fight back because I don't see myself winning. He was all holding his arm and swearing.

PART 29 BROKEN SOUL

Dora and Sheeda came into the kitchen.

Dora: What happened here?

Rasheeda: my expensive dishes!

Sheeda noticed that her son is in pain she went to him.

Sheeda: What's wrong moon pie?

Tshepiso: think i got a fracture

Sheeda: How did you.. What's really going on here? Bennice what happened here?

I didn't know what to say, i was still in tears.

Dora: Nissi did you do this?

Sheeda: You think Bennice did this? Because if that's true then she's out, today!

I was speechless and scared at the same time.

Dora: Talk Bennice!

Me: Well i...

Sheeda: Please go and pack because you fired!

My heart sank, i started walking Tshepi grabbed my hand.

Tshepi: I did this, you know my Temper Sheeda.

Sheeda: You did this?

Him: Yes i wanted Nissi to do something for me and she didn't so i got pissed and started throwing dishes at her

Sheeda: What? Then how did you get a fracture?

Him: i Hit her and she tried defending herself by throwing a pot at me.

Sheeda: Seriously? You hit a woman?

She looked at me

Sheeda: I am so sorry Bennice.

I was standing there asking myself why is Tshepiso defended me

Sheeda: and let's take to you to the hospital.

They both walked out. Shuuuu that was close.

Dora: i am really so eish this boy mara, did he hurt you?

Me: No I'm fine

Dora: I must talk to sheeda, can't allow this to happen. I mean this is abuse.

Dora and i picked up the broken dishes and threw them away while sweeping the other pieces.

Dora: It's 16:00 we might as well start with dinner.

We both cooked dinner and set the table...Tshepiso and Sheeda came back while we were putting food on the table. Tshepiso had a bandage on his hand, and he looked drowsy.

Dora: How did it go Madam?

Sheeda: Thankfully it's not a fracture, Doctor said he will be fine.

Dora: That's better

Tshepiso: I'm just gonna go and lie down a bit.

Sheeda: Should we make you a sandwich so that you can drink your pain killers, you can't drink your painkillers with an empty stomach

Him: Ya sure.

He continued walking.

Sheeda: Bennice would you be a Lam and do my son a Chicken mayo sandwich with orange juice

Me: Yes mam'

I went to the kitchen, i didn't know where to start with a chicken mayo sandwich, so i made him a cheese, and chicken Palony sandwich with orange juice, and took it to him.

His door was slightly opened i knocked he said come in, i went in and he was laying in bed.

Me: Here's your sandwich
He sat up straight and took the tray..
Him: Thank you.
I started walking out but stopped.
Me: Why did you save me?
Him: What you talking about?
Me: at the kitchen why did you tell your mom and Dora that you the one who threw the dishes.
Him: i don't know
Me: Well for what it's worth thank you, and I'm really sorry about almost breaking your arm.
He put the tray aside as if like he bit on a needle or something because his expression changed
Me: What's wrong?
Him: did you put cheese in there?
Me: Yes
Him: Fuck!
Me: What's wrong?
Him: Please leave and tell everyone that my room is gonna be off limits for the next coming 30min or hour.
I went out and closed the door, did i just kill him?
I went back to Dora.
Me: Dora can i ask you something?
Dora: Yes..
Me: Tshepiso doesn't eat cheese?
Her: Yes, he doesn't eat Dairy products his lactose intolerant.
Me: Okay
That sounded serious i hope he won't die
Dora: Why you ask?
Me: Nothing
She looked at me
Dora: Nissi what did you do?
Me: Okay i made him a sandwich and put cheese i didn't know that his allergic.
Sheeda came to us.
Rasheeda: Bennice please fetch your Cv.
Me: Yes mam'
Sheeda: I'll go and check on my son
Dora: You don't wanna go there.
Sheeda: Why?
Dora: He ate cheese
Sheeda set out a deep sigh
Sheeda: Oh Lord
Me: Sorry Madam i didn't know that his allergic to cheese
Sheeda: It's fine, go get your Cv.
I went out and fetched my Cv then gave it to her..... After and hour or two we all gathered at the table to eat.
Sheeda: How are you feeling now moon pie?
Him: I'm tight.
Someone came in while we were eating i just heard a man voice that was scolding someone. He came to the lounge. I figured that it was his father because he looked a bit old like he was in his 50s. He was wearing a suit, with glasses and he was black. He didn't look much like Tshepiso, Tshepiso looked like his mother just that his mom had a brighter complexion.

Everyone kept quiet, it's like no one was happy to see him.

Him: Good evening.

Only Sheeda and Dora answered. Tshepiso looked pissed and irritated.

He scolded the man who was carrying his bag.

Him: Now I must tell you to go and put my bag upstairs?

The man apologised and went upstairs.

Him: Jislaaik!

He came and joined us at the table.

Now I know where Tshepiso gets his attitude from.

Sheeda: Honey I thought that you coming back tomorrow

Him: my flight was early.

Dora: Welcome back sir.

Him: Thank you Dora

He didn't acknowledge my presence.

He looked at Tshepi..

Him: And wena Odirang mo? (what are you doing here)

Dora: He came to visit us Mr Vic

Vic: he has a game this Saturday

The table went dead silent

Vic: Ehh motho, why are you here?

Tshepiso was feeling uneasy.

Tshepiso: I.. I got suspended.

Vic: for what?

Him: Punching my opponent.

Vic threw the fork on the plate.

Vic: Can't you get one thing in your life right man?

Sheeda: Victor please not now!

Vic: If not now then when Sheeda?

Sheeda kept quiet

Vic: This boy is wasting my money!

First he went to Uj and dropped out in the middle of the year! Do you know how expensive those soccer trials were? I don't wanna mention the travelling expenses, he cost me a lot of money and what happens next? He doesn't have a future!

Tshepi stood up.

Sheeda: Moon pie please..

Tshepiso: Please what Sheeda? You want me to sit here and listen to this man insulting me?

Vic: This man is your father!

Tshepi: Sometimes I wonder if you really my father?

Victor: You see how his talking to me Sheeda?.

Victor stood up.

Vic: I cannot believe that a man like me can have you as a son!

Tshepi: And I can't believe that a Boy like me can have you as a father!

Dora: guys Please stop

Tshepi: No Dora, Fuck this guy!

Yooh Victor got more mad and he went to him, I didn't wanna see what was gonna happen next, sheeda stood up to get in between them but Vic pushed Sheeda that sheeda fell hard. Tshepiso got mad and pushed his father

Tshepiso: What's wrong with you? You don't fucken touch my mother.

I quickly went to help Sheeda who was now crying on the floor.

Tshepiso and his father went down on each other, punches were thrown Dora called security.

Sheeda was crying and screaming

Sheeda: Stop it!! You gonna kill my son!

Tshepi was losing, i mean he was no match to his father!

Security didn't waste time they came and held em, Tshepiso was bleeding through his mouth.

Tshepiso: if you touch my mother again I'm gonna kill you!

He said that and walked upstairs. We were all standing there trying to catch our breaths and process what was happening.

Vic: You can leave now! *referring to security*

He went close to sheeda and yelled at her.

Him: You spoiled this boy too much! Look how he is now!

He went upstairs.

Dora came to sheeda we were both holding her..

Dora: I'm sorry Madam

Rasheeda: Can i sleep at the pool house tonight?

Dora: Ofcause Madam.

We all went out, Sheeda was limping a bit. We got to The pool house and sat down sheeda started crying again

Sheeda: I'm scared that one day they will kill each other.

Dora: Quickly get her a glass of water with sugar Nissi

I went to do as i was told. Dora looked at me as if like give us some privacy. I went to bath then put on my short silk nightdress.

And went outside to sit by the pool. I was busy thinking that yaa just because people are rich doesn't mean they happy...I saw Tshepiso coming to my direction as I was still sitting there and thinking.

Him: Is my mom here?

I nodded my head yes,he walked to the pool house but i stopped him.

Me: You don't wanna go there she's still emotional.

Him: Okay.

Me: How is your arm?

He looked at it

Him: Lucky for me your throw was lousy so I'm gonna be fine.

Me: I'm truly sorry

Him: It's Ayt

Me: And thank you for saving me

Him: That you gonna have to make it up to me.

Me: How?

He came close and pushed me i fell into the pool. I seriously thought i was gonna drown.

Me: What are you doing? I can't swim

He chuckled.

Him: the water is not deep, come

He crouched on the side and extended his hand to me. I went to grab but then i pulled him inside too.

Me: Now we even.

Him: I'll get you again

He came close to me, the water was reaching me on my shoulders. He was tall so he was cool.

Me: We have to go out its cold

He brushed my hair back.

Him: Ya we will and you got your hair wet

I touched his dreads

Me: And so are your dreads..

We smiled at each other and he came very close.

I looked down. He bent over a bit to kiss me.

Me: Uhm we should get out

I turned and tried to go out, but he grabbed me and turned me around and kissed me. I felt my body shivering, i was very scared my heart my beating Way to fast..

We kissed for a while, his hands were up on my breasts i swear i never felt like this before.

Him: How about we go and dry ourselves In my room?

It's not everyday that a hot guy wants you.

I smiled

Me: Okay

He smiled back and we got out, then started walking to the house busy stopping and kissing along the way, and damn he was a great kisser.

PART 30 BROKEN SOUL

I wish that i could say i didn't sleep with Tshepiso, but i did. That can make me to be labelled as a whore and all that but for a person like me to be wanted it's something that has never happened before. I spent all my life being down graded at school, being called ugly, but today I'm wanted by a hot guy that truly means something to me. The sex was okay, I'm only saying that because i was uneasy and scared and also my mind was not in it that much it was all over. We did use a condom thank God. I opened my eyes the following morning and i was still naked in Tshepi's bed, i turned around and he was sleeping next to me. I looked at him all smiling. I gave him a peck on his lips, and that woke him up.

Him: And when did you wake up?

Me: about 2 seconds ago.

Him: What Time is it?

Me: I'm not sure.

He took his iPhone and check.

Him: 8:45

Me: Oh my God!

Him: What?

Me: Work for me starts at 7:00am

I got up and looked for my night gown i found it and put it on, then started walking out.

Him: Wait you can't walk out like that.

He got me his gown and put it over me then we walked out, checked who was there and who wasn't. Luckily the lounge and kitchen seemed empty so we started walking fast.

When we were at the kitchen we heard a voice saying "what's going on here" behind us. We turned around and Thank God it was Dora.

Dora: What is going on here?

Tshepiso: Uhm nothing.

She gave us a straight face and we walked out. He walked me half way then kissed me on my cheek, then i went to the pool house. I got in and closed the door, then leaned on the door smiling, that was an amazing experience for me.

I went to bath and my Vagina was a bit sore he really was trying to tear it apart. I bathe then put on my uniform and went to work.

Sis Dora was not happy with me.

Dora: What are you doing?

Me: I'm doing my job

Dora: No i mean what are you doing messing with Tshepiso like that?

I didn't answer.

Her: i brought you here for work i didn't bring you here to sleep with my boss's son don't make me feel like i did a mistake by bringing you here.

I do my work very good and how that came about i have no idea where she gets into my business.

She went to clean the other parts of the house and i started with the kitchen all cleaning, i was smiling and humming...Tshepiso came into the kitchen and hugged me from behind. I turned around and he kissed me.

Me: And where are you going looking all fresh.

Him: I'm meeting up with my friends.

Me: Okay

Him: so I'll see you later.

Me: Okay.

He kissed me again.

Me: Ain't you gonna have breakfast?

Him: Naa we gonna eat somewhere..

Me: Okay. Tell me why are all your clothes written Fresh boyz?

Him: That's me and my squad's label.

Me: I haven't seen it anywhere

Him: It's not in stores. We have our own designer

Me: Why?

Him: because we wanna be different can't wear clothes that other people are wearing.

Me: Whoa! Excuse me..

Him: Yeah it's like that

Me: so why is it only 3 colors?

Him: my Favourite colour is black, my other friend his favourite colour is grey, and my other friend his favourite colour is white.

Me: ohh now i understand.

Him: Yes so i have to go I'll see you later.

He kissed me again and left. I continued to clean, and clean. Dora came to tell me that Sheeda and her husband they want to see me in the study. She accompanied me and i went in, i don't wanna lie i was nervous.

Sheeda: Please sit down

I sat down.

Me: Am i In trouble?

Sheeda: no you not. I want you to meet my husband Victor Thobekgale, and hun this is our new maid Bennice.

Victor: How are you Bennice?

Me: I'm fine thanks and you Sir

Him: I'm good.

I was nervous what does this man want with me?

Him: I'm sure that i might have presented myself to you as this kind of a monster especially what happened last night.

He is a monster for real.

Me: i don't see you as a monster sir.

Him: That's good because I'm not one.

Yeah right!

Him: i was looking at your CV and i stumbled across something that really caught my attention.

Me: What Is it sir?

Him: Your matric it's seriously good.

I have people tell me that alot.

Him: i mean look at your Maths - 68%, physics-60%, life sciences-80%. I mean that's ridiculously good!

Me: Thank you sir.

My mom always motivated me to study hard she said if i pass matric then that's my ticket out of this life. Poverty and all that really made me to study hard so i can escape that life

Him: How did it come about for you to even be here? You could be studying somewhere

Me: i wasn't afforded that opportunity sir, i come from a very financially struggling family and now that my mother is dead i had nowhere to go so I'm here because I'm trying to make a living.

Him: do you know what i do?

Me: No Sir

Him: i own a pharmaceutical company that has created the famous pain killers out there called Mybullen, have you ever heard of those pain killers?

Me: No Sir.

Him: It's a pill that contains Paracetamol, Codeine phosphate, and Iboprufen and it is s4. I seriously didn't know what he was talking about.

Him: Now we busy working on creating a better drug with less side effects for patients living with Hiv it's a research that has taken 2 years but we getting there.

Me: That's nice sir

Him: i want the best in my team and i feel like you have the potential.

Me: me sir?

Him: Yes i want to make you an offer you cannot refuse.

I sat up straight

Him: i want to send you to school to study Pharmacy and then come and work for me.

My eyes were wide open.

Me: Wow uhm i don't know what to say.

Him: You don't have to answer now you can think about it, but don't take forever because we have to apply and all that.

Me: Yes sir i won't take long to think about it and thank you for the opportunity.

Him: You smart so i want you to be something in life and not a maid..

I smiled, and walked out i heard them talking behind me.

Sheeda: she's a very sweet girl i like her..

Vic: She's very smart too and i like that..

Okay maybe Vic is not as bad as I thought he is. I rushed out to Dora i was busy screaming her name and looking for her. She came from the laundry room

Dora: I'm here what's all this screaming about?

Me: You won't believe what just happened

Dora: What?

Me: Mr Vic made me an offer that i cannot refuse.

Dora: What's that?

Me: He wants to send me to school then after work for him in his company

Dora started jumping up and down all happy

Her: Did you say yes?

Me: Not yet

Her: Why not?

Me: i was too shocked that's why I didn't answer immediately

Her: Mr Vic loves people who are educated and who are willing to learn. His a very good person despite his temper and he wouldn't have chosen you if he didn't feel like you have the potential

Me: I'm soo excited i don't even know what to say

Dora: This is an opportunity you cannot refuse you still young go and study..

I know i want to be a chef but i can't refuse this offer. They came down while Dora and i were still talking and said they going out to fetch Sheeda's mother.

Dora went back to work and i stood there at the lounge all happy still couldn't believe it.

I heard the kitchen door opening i went to see who it was and It was Tshepiso with his friends but this time around they weren't alone they were with some girls. The friends passed me with their gfs.

Tshepiso: Uhm Nissi Can you please make us something to drink? Bring it in the lounge for us.

This colored girl was all over him, she looked very pretty i give her that.

Girl: 100% fruit juice for me please

Tshepiso: Just get the girls a 100% fruit juice and get us guys some whiskey on the top shelf there's whiskies.

Then they went to join the others all laughing and kissing, wtf was that all about? i slept with this guy last night.

I prepared the drinks for them and went to give them, but i was still holding the tray.

Me: Tshepiso can i talk to you in private?

Him: Uhm not now I'm still busy.

Me: i think now is a good time

The "gf" looked at me

Her: Why are you being scolded by a maid?

Him: It's because my mom give this Maids power

They all laughed. I started getting pissed i dropped the tray infront of them.

Me: i bet i wasn't a maid last night! When you were dry humping me!

I started walking away.

Girl: What? You fucked your maid? Agh you disgusting T-Pee

He stood up and ran after me, he grabbed me by hand.

Him: Wtf was that? You trying to embarrass me infront of my friends?

Me: ohh so now I'm embarrassing you?

Him: Fuck Nissi! Is this about last night?

Me: Ofcause it's about last night!

Him: Move the fuck on! What did you expect? That i was gonna wake up and ask you to marry me just because i slept with you? You fucken out of your alcoholic mind if you drink!

Me: So it was about sex?

Him: Obviously! Nissi I'm trying not to hurt your feelings right now but you making it hard for me. I don't love i only fuck and move on. The only woman i love is my mom. So i don't know why you came to me looking for love or a relationship because i ain't got none of that!

Woow! I got myself in another Lindo situation.

PART 31 BROKEN SOUL

That was like a hot poker sharved through my throat and heart. I shouldve seen this coming, how can i be such a fool? I walked out of the house crying and went to the pool house. What did i expect from Tshepiso vele? Guys like him change girls like there's no Tomorrow. I needed to talk to someone, i took my phone and called Zuko. She answered after a while of Me trying her.

Her: Hello

Me: Hello chomp

Her: Nissi is that you?

Me: Yes

Her: I'm soo glad that you called me Is this your number?

Me: Yes this is my number

Her: Okay i will save it. What's going on my friend? How Is everything?

I started crying.

Her: Hau Yini manje? (what's wrong now)

Me: I don't know know what's wrong with me i keep on repeating the same mistakes it's like i never learn

Her: Ukhuluma ngani (what are you talking about)

Me: i slept with my boss'son and he played me Chomp he slept with Me then after told me that he was using me for sex.

Her: Ini! (what) chomp it hasn't been even a month since you started working there and now usuvula amathanga (you opening your legs)

Me: Zuko I didn't call you to lecture me

Her: i will lecture you because ingcondo yakho ithatha kancane (you very slow)

Me: Zuko it's not my fault. Yazi that guy uyashisa (his hot)

Zuko: so wena ugcine ngokuthi ubheke i ceiling ngoba uyashisa? (so you decided to stare at his ceiling because his hot)

Me: Zuko don't be like that. Anyway his father made me an offer. He wants me to further my studies his gonna pay and after i work for him.

Zuko: i hope you said yes.

Me: Well im...

Zuko: well im.. What?

Me: i said I'm going to think about it

Her: Think about what? Chomp you might never get an offer like this anymore. Do you know how many people would jump at that opportunity that wena you toying with?

Me: Hai trust Zuko to lecture you.

Zuko: Nissi i love you, you like a sister to me. Uyabona ukuthi awuna muntu (you can see that you have no one)

Me: i regret calling you now.

Her: take this opportunity uyeke ukuba yis'muka na ndwendwe (stop being a slut)

Me: Maybe you right i should take this opportunity

Her: Vele I'm right.

Me: Anyway let me go

Her: Okay and stop chasing after boys! The right one will come wena just focus on your life right now.

Me: Yes mom!

Her: Ithi ngihambe (let me go) i have to get back to work.

Me: Okay bye

Her: Love you

Me: Love you too

Her: uyeke amadoda! (stay away from boys)

Me: whatever!

I hung up the phone and sat on the bed. Zuko was right i need to focus on me, and my future. I really want to make my mama proud and myself proud. God gave me this opportunity and I'm grabbing it with both hands, I'm gonna stop chasing after boys, round about now I'm gonna chase my dreams!

I am done with men! Sis Dora came while i was sitting and thinking.

Dora: weee! Ave uvilapha! (you are lazy)

I looked at her

Dora: I've been looking all over for you kanti wena uzifihle la (I've been looking for you, and you hiding here) come and help me to hang the laundry.

I stood up and we went to the house. We passed by the lounge, Tshepiso and his crew were still there. It's painful though seeing him with a new bitch but it will all get better in time.

We went to the laundry room, and offloaded the laundry to the baskets and went to hang it.

Me: Sis Dora

Her: Yes Lala?

Me: i decided to take the offer that Mr Vic proposed to me.

She looked at me smiling

Her: Thank God you came to your senses. You know Nissi i feel like you came here for a reason, God brought you closer to your dream.

Me: That is true.

We continued Hanging the laundry all singing church songs. When we were done we went back to the house, Tshepiso and his friends were no longer around. I went to the sitting room and tidied it because they had left glasses and all that.....

Sheeda and vic came in while i was busy, they were with some Indian woman who looked very old she even had a walking stick.

Sheeda: We home now mimi

Mimi: Finally i thought i was gonna die from all that flying.

Vic was holding a luggage bag.

They passed me.

Me: Sir can i please talk to you

Him: Talk

I looked at them.

Him: don't worry about them, just talk.

Me: First of all thank you for the offer and i wanna tell you that i accept it.

He looked at me shocked.

Him: You sure?

Me: Yes sir, this is an opportunity of a lifetime such opportunities come once.

He was soo happy he hugged me.

Him: Welcome to the family

Sheeda hugged me too.

Him: Starting from today you no longer gonna be treated like a maid, you gonna be treated like family. I'm gonna treat you like my child.

I never thought that this will mean soo much to him.

Him: Dora! Dora! Dora!

Dora came in.

Him: Can you please prepare one of the rooms for our new addition to the family.

Dora: I'm not following sir

Him: Nissi has joined our family

Dora smiled.

Dora: I'll get to it sir.

Sheeda: And I'll take you out, we gonna have a girls time out.

Vic: and I'll make a few calls and see if we can't get you some space at any university...

He started walking upstairs.

Sheeda: Why don't you go and take off the uniform.

Me: Okay Madam

Rasheeda: Please call me Sheeda, or Rasheeda.

I smiled and went out to the pool house. Can i trust this Vic guy? Won't he play me? I have little trust for old men. Dora was at the pool house Packing my clothes.

Her: The new addition to the Thobekgale family.

I flashed a fake smile and she noticed.

Her: Hau what's wrong?

Me: i know this might come across as being rude and all that but..

Her: What's wrong Lala come and talk to Dora

She sat me down.

Me: I've had bad experiences with old men. They used me and did horrible things to me, so i was wondering if i can trust Mr Victor.

Her: You mean... You think that Vic can..

Me: I'm a bit worried

She chuckled

Her: Have no fear Lala, Vic is not like that. He is a man of principles, his totally not like that. Yena he has a very good heart he likes helping other people that's why i think his this much blessed. I've worked here for many years and i haven't seen him do anything out of the ordinary. Trust me i can never lead you to a lions den.

I smiled..

Her: Enjoy this moment and stop worrying about things that will never happen. Don't allow the devil to put fear in you by telling you things that are not true.

Maybe i overreacted a bit, if Dora says i can Vic then i can trust him. I changed to a Jean and a t-shirt and sandals, took my small hand bag and went to Rasheeda. She was already waiting for me at the door.

We walked up to some car, it was black and looked beautiful. We drove to a lot of places, first she took me to the hair salon and i put on a Brazilian weave, then went to do a manicure and a pedi. She then took me to a dermatologist for my skin who did some laser thing to remove the black Marks, then made me drink some pill that will prevent me from getting acne, and gave me a cream to apply twice a day it will keep my skin moist and help in vanishing the black marks. I looked at my face in the mirror, the laser did a good job because the Marks were not as bad as they were before they were now a bit lighter, he said in a few weeks they will be completely gone if i use the cream as instructed. We ended the day by going to some boutique she wanted to get herself a sarie and i decided to get me one too. Mine was Black and silver with a Black veil.

Sheeda was all excited when she saw me in that.

Her: You look so beautiful it suits you very well

Me: Thank you

Her: You look like a true Indian bride

I blushed.

Her: Let's go it's getting late.

We made our way home and arrived there at 18:00. Tshepiso was sitting at the kitchen with his grandma and Dora he was on his tab.

Sheeda: We home.

Tshepiso lifted his eyes to look at us and he went back to his Tab, then looked at me again as if like he couldn't believe what he was seeing.

Dora: Wow Nissi you look beautiful

I smiled.

Sheeda: I like how it takes out her beautiful body

Dora: and how it's holding her breasts.

Sheeda: What do you think Mimi?

Mimi: Of what?

Sheeda: I forgot you old.

Tshepiso was still starring at me with his hand on his mouth.

Sheeda: That is my mom, we call her Mimi, Mimi meet my new daughter her name is Nissi

She looked at me..

Her: Hello Nancy

Sheeda: No its Nissi

Mimi: What did i say?

Sheeda: Forget it.

Dora: and your skin, the dark marks are better

Sheeda: i took her to a dermatologist.

Dora: You look beautiful Nissi

Me: Thank you

Sheeda: And what do you think moon pie?

He was starring at me didn't hear what his mom said.

Dora snapped her fingers across him..

Tshepiso: Huh?

Sheeda: Are you okay?

Him: Ya I'm fine

Mimi: So i take it you still a Virgin Nancy

Sheeda: Mimi!

Mimi: She's wearing like she's getting married so she must be pure am i right Nancy?

Tshepiso put his Tab away and looked at me.

Me: Well..i

Sheeda: don't answer that pumpkin

Mimi: She shouldn't be ashamed it's something she ought to be proud about

I looked at Dora signalling for her to help me

Dora: That's personal Mimi

Mimi: Sorry then

Tshepiso: Na wait, Mimi is right. I'm not a Virgin and I'm not ashamed to say it, so Nissi if you are one don't be afraid to say it.

I couldn't believe this guy, i looked at Dora she shrugged her shoulders

Tshepiso: So are you a Virgin Nissi?

I looked at Sheeda

Sheeda: Just tell them pumpkin so we can move on.

Tshepiso: This i got to hear.

He put his hands on his mouth, and elbows leaning on the counter, and raised his left eyebrow, i swear i felt like killing him right there!

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 32 BROKEN SOUL

How can Tshepiso sell me out like this though?

Dora: Let's go and eat you guys the food is getting cold.

Sheeda and Mimi went first, then Dora followed. That was really a close one.

I looked at Tshepiso

Me: What the hell was that?

Him: we just wanted to know if you a Virgin or not that's all

Me: You seriously need to grow up!

Him: I'm 22

He said that while walking to the dinning room.

I followed too and sat next to him.

We started dishing up.

Mimi: Were is Vic?

Sheeda: You know Vic is hardly at home Mimi

Mimi: Why? Are you guys getting a divorce?

Sheeda: No Mimi his handling some business..

I got my hand under the table then ran it on Tshepi's thigh, then went up to his crouch.

Revenge is the best dish served cold.

He started coughing, then gave me a serious look.

Sheeda: Moon pie there's something daddy and i wanted to talk to you about.

I went up and tried to put my hand inside his pants and he held my hand.

Him: What's that?

Sheeda: i think it's better if we wait for daddy.

I was forcing to get my hand inside his pants and he was busy trying to stop me that we were having some arm wrestling under the table.

Dora: Are you guys okay?

Tshepiso: we fine

That went on until he gave up and started stretching his hand it was the one that I injured. I finally got my hand inside his pants and started giving him a hand job, he

couldn't sit still, and he was tapping his fingers on the table.

Sheeda: What is wrong moon pie, you don't look fine?

I got my hand out.

Him: I'm fine just feeling a bit hot.

He looked at me and mumbled the words "Fuck you"

I smiled.

Me: Is there anyone who wants some dessert?

Sheeda: Yes but we not finished eating

Me: I'll prepare it so long

Dora: You not gonna eat?

Me: I'm not really hungry just craving for some Ice cream

Sheeda: Okay Bamboo you can go and prepare dessert.

I looked at Tshepiso

Me: would you please come and help me

Him: What?

Me: Can you please help me to prepare desserts.

Him: Uhm i can't i have a situation right now

Me: What situation?

Him: Just a situation

Me: Come on

Him: i said i can't!

Dora: It's fine I'll help you.

Dora and i went to prepare dessert, we prepared ice cream with ultra-mel for everyone, then took it to them.

Sheeda: Mimi do you want some dessert?

Mimi: some what?

Sheeda: dessert

Mimi: a decoy?

Sheeda: No Mimi, do you want dessert? Asnt like ice cream

Mimi: i haven't gotten through my food now you talking about dessert

We laughed, Mimi was very fun. We ate our dinner like one big happy family, i really enjoyed their presence, i enjoyed being part of this family. When we were done Sheeda took Mimi to her room, Tshepiso went to his bedroom, I think he was fine now, and Dora started clearing up the table i helped her. She smiled.

Her: You shouldn't be doing this anymore, you no longer a maid

Me: i like helping you.

We cleared the table then Dora left to the pool house, and i went to put the dishes in the dishwasher and Mr Vic came in.

Him: Evening Nissi

Me: Evening Sir

Him: Where is everyone?

Me: They went to bed

Him: Okay

He started walking upstairs, then stopped

Him: ohw before i forget. I tried getting you space but i couldn't, registrations are closed. So whats gonna happen is that we'll apply next year and in the meantime i registered you at some medical college for you to have a bit of knowledge for next year, they will prepare you for next year, so that your first year at varsity can be smooth.

Me: Thank you very much Sir

Him: You welcome, and please don't call me Sir rather call me Dad or something you are part of the family.

I smiled

Him: Good night

Me: Night

He walked upstairs. Ya this was gonna be a drastic change for me. I walked to my bedroom, it was beautiful had a plasma on the wall my duvet was Green and most things were green, i had my own bathroom which also had a flat screen. I threw myself on the bed it was crazy comfortable, not so long ago I was sleeping on the floor now I'm gonna be sleeping like a princess. Someone knocked at my door and i went to open, it was sheeda..

Her: Can i please come in?

Me: Ofcourse

I opened the door wider and she came in, she was holding some clothes, she put them on the bed.

Her: i bought this pjs not long ago and they are small, so i thought that they might fit you.

Me: Thank you Sheeda

She smiled at me

Her: You know I've always wanted to have a daughter, but God had it another way. I'm not saying i regret having Tshepi i love him to death but i wanted someone i could do things with, and God brought you to us.

I didn't know what to say

Her: I'm not saying i want to take your mother's place, i just wanna be your friend

I smiled at her

Me: I'm also thankful to have you in my life, i hope you and i we'll have a good relationship.

She came to hug me.

Her: Good night bamboo

Me: Good night Sheeda.

She went out. I changed the sarie and put on the Pjs they fit perfectly and i slept.....

.....

Time passed with me living with the Thobekgales i really felt blessed both Vic and Sheeda treated me like their own, they showed me endless love and always showered me with gifts. I was even taught how to drive was about to take my license. Tshepiso and i we were cool but he still didn't know that his family adopted me. Tomorrow i was gonna start at the medical school, i was pretty nervous about the situation, my skin had cleared the black marks were completely gone and the cream returned my yellow complexion and made my skin smooth i didn't even a single pimple. It was a Sunday morning when i woke up and Dora told me that Vic had called a family meeting. I brushed my teeth and washed my face, wore leggings with a spaghetti top that had a push up bra, i also put on my sleepers and went downstairs. Sheeda, Vic, and Tshepiso were already sitting down.

I went to sit down.

Me: Morning

Sheeda: Morning bamboo

Vic: Morning my Angel.

Vic stood up.

Him: Tshepi me and your mom we wanna discuss something with you.

Tshepiso: What is it?

Vic: we have a new addition to the family.

Him: addition to the family?

Sheeda: Yes moon pie. You have a sister now

Him: You pregnant?

Sheeda: No I'm not, you know my womb is scarred i cannot have anymore kids.

Him: Soo what sister?

Vic: You sitting next to her.

He turned and gave me a weird look.

Him: What?

Vic: We decided to adopt Nissi she's your new sister.

He shook his head

Sheeda: Say something moon pie

Him: What you want me to say sheeda? Because you guys went ahead without discussing it with me first! What? Are you guys trying to replace me?

Sheeda: that's not true you'll always be my moon pie.

Him: i can't believe you guys are trying to replace me

Vic: That's not true Son. You know we love you.

He stood up

Him: Yea whatever!

He started walking to his room, then stopped and looked at me

Him: I'll never accept you as my sister, not now not ever!

He continued walking, sheeda stood up and tried to go after him but Vic stopped her.

Vic: Let him cool down.

That was just unnecessary, Tshepiso is very dramatic.

Vic: Angel go and get dressed so we can go and buy your textbooks

Me: Okay dad.

I walked upstairs, was weird calling Vic "Dad" but I'm hoping I'll get used to it. I got to my room but what Tshepiso did was Eating me inside, i have to go and give him a piece of my mind. I walked to his room, he was all standing there with only his boy shorts on and a towel over his shoulder, and damn that body sure wanted to make me drool, but i wasn't here for that.

Him: Don't we knock anymore?

I stood in front of him with my arms folded.

Me: Yaz uyabhora shame! (you are a bore)

Him: Excuse me?

Me: Excuse me my left foot! Khula bo! Yooh safa wuwe! (you should grow up) Ave uno drama bo! (you are dramatic).

He looked at me

Me: Your parents are not trying to replace you, you will forever be their child!

Him: I cannot accept you as a sister!

Me: Why?

He looked down..

Him: Because...

Me: Because what?

He didn't say anything

Me: Kanti why do you hate me soo much? What did i ever do do you! All I'm trying to do is have a family of my own okay.

He came close.

Him: Nini..

Me: Don't Nini me! This is my chance to have a good life and im....

He grabbed me by my waist while i was busy talking like that and he kissed me. That kiss reminded me of things, it was very hard to resist it. We kissed then after he pulled out, with his forehead Still against mine. He was rubbing his nose against mine.

Him: i cannot accept you as my sister because...

Me: Because?

He kissed me again, then pulled out.

Him: because i fucken have feelings for you!

Say what?????

PART 33 BROKEN SOUL

I cannot believe Tshepiso right now, after all that he said to me? I mean he said the only woman that he loves is his mother. I separated myself from him and went to stand by the door, I wanted what he said to sink in.

Him: Nini please say something

Me: What do you want me to say, huh?

Him: I just told you that I have feelings for you, I think there is something to say.

Me: something like what? I mean weren't you the one who told me that the only woman you love is your mother? Weren't you the one telling me that I'm embarrassing you in front of your friends?

He came close to touch me

Him: Nini..

Me: No Tshepiso please just stay away from me. I am trying to focus on my studies and I'm not gonna have you come and complicate my life like that again! You hurt me, treated me like a pass by and now you telling me that you have feelings for me? Are you crazy?

Him: If you can just stop talking for a while and listen to me..

Me: No I've heard enough

I went out and banged the door behind me. Tshepiso really thinks that I'm gonna say "yes" after how he treated me in front of his friends? He is crazy! I went to my bedroom took my cheap phone and called Zuko I needed some advice but she didn't answer.

Someone knocked in my room.

Me: Come in

It was Vic.

Him: Angel are you ready to go?

Me: Not yet sorry I got held up.

Him: Okay hurry up you'll find me in the Bentley.

I took a quick shower, then wore a red jumpsuit with red sandals and a Gold & black belt. I combed my weave then took my hand bag and went to the Bentley. Vic had a driver and we went. The school was close to Pretoria. My phone beeped and I took it out, it was a message from Zuko telling me that she will call me later she's still at work.

Vic: That's your phone?

Me: Yes

Him: We can't have that.

We got to The book shop at Pretoria we got the books. We got a chemistry textbook, psychology, Pharmacology, biology and English. Those were the subjects I was gonna do. After getting some stationary we went to Vodacom and he bought me a Huawei P8, an apple laptop and an apple iPad to save my notes and take it with me to school because it was portable, I thanked him although those were a lot of gadgets. When I thought that was all but it wasn't we went to a Ford dealership and he got me a red Ford ST. Yes red was my favourite colour. Since I only had a learner's he put the car in his name.

Him: I got Tshepi a Mustang so I thought it's only fair that I get you a car too. I'm only getting you this one because you still have to get your license first when you get one I'll get you an expensive car too.

I was so happy the way I was so happy I had a panic attack, I started blowing air to myself by my hand. Vic asked for the car to be delivered because he didn't trust my driving. We drove to Steers and had something to eat, then went back home. Vic went about his business and I went to my room to set my phone up, I installed WhatsApp, Facebook and all that nonsense.

I stayed in my room busy playing with my gadgets i probably needed help with the laptop and ipad i am not soo computer literate. It was now in the afternoon and i felt a bit hungry, so i walked to the kitchen, Tshepiso was in the kitchen with his friends and their gfs. I immediately got irritated i mean can't they find something else to do or another place to hang out at. Tshepiso's colored girl was not around he was riding solo this time. I pulled a serious face i wasn't gonna laugh with them and all that. I walked up to the fridge and got me some cheese, ham, lettuce, and butter, i also poured juice. I went to the bread Tin and took out 2 slices and started buttering my bread all of a sudden there was silence In the kitchen. I swear i felt a bit uncomfortable i won't lie i couldn't wait to finish and go, then after a new conversation started which i think was about me.

Tshepiso: So ladies and gentleman here's the thing. She just started to pop it for a nigga then looked back and told me baby it's real.

Guy1: and?

Tshepi: And i said i ain't doubt you for a second i squeezed it in and i can tell her how i feel.

It was more of rapping than a typical conversation.

Guy2: I really feel like the sky is opening for real.

Tshepiso: I wish we could take off and go anywhere but here baby you know the deal.

Guy1: she's bad for real dog

I was soo lost what were they talking about? See this hip hop thing i don't understand it.

Guy2: Don't do it dog she won't.

Guy1: Yeah man T-bone is right she won't.

Then i felt someone hugging me from behind, i already knew who it was

Guy1: She won't dog

Tshepi: but shit, then again maybe she will.

Me: Get your hands off me!

Guy2: Told you that she won't

Tshepi: Come on Nini you gonna reject me even when I just proposed to you in the most gangster way ever?

Me: You call that proposing?

Him: Yes, that's how Fresh boyz propose!

Me: No wonder why none of yall are in a serious relationship.

I said that and took my sandwich, and walked away. They stayed there busy making retarded noises.

Guy2: Never in the niggadum world have i seen T-Pee get rejected like that!

Guy1: That's gonna cause a sting!

Tshepi: And that's why i got to get her!

They seriously need to grow up or get jobs.

I went to my room and ate. Zuko called

Me: Chomp!

Her: Stwetla!

Me: don't start with that name girl.

She giggled.

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm okay and you?

Her: I'm fine galza, just work got me tired.

Me: You'll be alright.

Her: So what's happening?

Me: i took the offer, I'm starting school tomorrow

She started making noise on the phone

Her: I'm soo happy for you my friend!

Me: I'm happy too.

Her: You see, you can be successful on your own without a man.

Me: Yeah about that

Her: What's wrong?

Me: some guy is busy chasing after me

Her: Awuke uyeke is'dodana bo! (leave boys alone)

Me: Aii let me go before you start to preach.

Her: Aisuka bye bye

Me: Bye

I hung up and just chilled in my room i wasn't in the mood for Tshepiso and his friends. Vic came to my room to give me my car keys, said my car has been delivered. I was soo excited I'm gonna take it to school tomorrow. The day went by and i went to shower prepared myself for dinner, i just put on my Pjs and went downstairs. I joined everyone at the table, we had a nice dinner and Tshepiso was starring at me the whole time, was making me blush. After dinner i went to bed. I was about to sleep when i heard a knock at my door and i went to open it was Tshepiso.

Me: What do you want?

Him: i just wanna talk to you

Me: Can't it wait till tomorrow?

Him: No

He slightly pushed me off the way and got in.

He sat on my bed.

I closed the door.

Him: I'm here to explain something

Me: What thing?

Him: You know the only reason i said that "there's no woman i love other than sheeda" it's the fact that im scared of getting hurt.

That was weird.

Him: i never really dated a girl before, I've never been in a serious relationship before because I'm scared of getting hurt for real.

I did not believe what he was saying I laughed a bit

Me: Are you kidding me? You scared of getting hurt

Him: Yes.

I saw that he was serious because he wasn't laughing or smiling.

Him: Kinda ironic isn't it?

I sat next to him.

Me: It is.

Him: That's the reason why i haven't persuaded a serious relationship

Me: Wow i didn't know that

Him: It's not that i can't love, it's just that i wanna love the right girl

He looked at me while say that.

I looked away.

Him: i am into to you for real Nini, i don't know what it is but I feel like there's something between us and i can see that you feel the same way about me too so stop fighting it.

I looked at him

Me: Who said I'm into you?

He gave me that cute side smile of his that revealed his shallow dimples

Him: Come on Nini even my enemies love me.

Me: i don't know Tshepi.

Him: Why don't you wanna be in relationship with me?

Me: because just like you I'm also scared, I've been hurt alot and I'm scared that you might hurt me too.

Him: im not saying that im not gonna hurt you but what i can promise you is that I'll always ride for you.

Me: i seriously don't know.

He lifted up my chin then kissed me. I pulled out and stood up.

Me: We not gonna make the same mistake again, please leave.

He stood up and went to the door, he stood there for a bit then came back to me and kissed me. I couldn't fight him, that kiss was just too i don't even know what to say, this guy knows how to make my knees weak. He picked me up and pinned me against the wall then went to kiss my neck, i wasn't quite sure about what was happening in my mind at that instant. The kiss escalated to tongue kissing our tongues were just playing against each other, i put my hands inside his pants and he put his under my Pj top and was squeezing my breasts.

Our 4play went on and on until we were both very horny, then after we took our Pjs off and we were completely naked. He went down on me and parted my legs, sucked me like the world was coming to an end.

Me: im... Co.. Comi.. N.. Coming

He came up and lifted my left leg and entered me slowly while passionately kissing me. Then he went for it and pumped me hard, i was trying not to scream but i ended up screaming because this nigga was hitting all the right places, he kissed me as a way of stopping me from screaming.

Yeap here i was repeating the same mistake again! But like they say don't hate the player, hate the game

PART 34 BROKEN SOUL

I woke up the following morning and Tshepi wasn't laying next to me, i knew right there that it's probably another hit and run. Sometimes I really hate myself for the things that i do how can I be soo dumb!. There's a saying that says "Fool me once then shame on you, but fool me twice then shame on me" And this time around it was shame on me! I got out of bed and went to bath, had to prepare for school. Tshepiso got in while i was clothing.

Him: going somewhere?

Me: Yes, school

Him: School?

Me: Vic is taking me to school.

Him: Really? How did that happen because Registrations are closed?

Me: I'm going to varsity next year, he got me into some medical college to prepare me for next year

Him: The one at Pta?

Me: Ya you know it?

Him: Yes i do.

I was struggling to clip my bra at the back.

Him: Want some help?

Me: No I'm fine

Him: doesn't look that way, you having a bit of a struggle.

He came and turned me around, then Fasten my bra for me, it was too tight that i gasped

Him: too tight?

Me: Yes

Him: Then you need to get new bras

Me: this bra is new i bought it with your mom.

He turned me around and looked at my breasts.

Him: i don't think this bra is gonna work, it seems small.

Me: Are you saying my breasts are big?

Him: No I'm saying you Gifted.

Me: That's a polite way to say they are big.

He chuckled

Him: Isn't there another bra, that's less tight?

I went to get another bra, and wore it then he clipped it for me, it was a bit better.

Him: That's better.

Me: Thank you

I tried walking away but he grabbed me and pulled me closer to him.

Him: You know first days at school are boring nothing much happens, how about you skip?

Me: I haven't even started school and already you teaching me bad habits.

He smiled

Him: bend the rules a bit..

He tried kissing me but i pushed him a bit.

Him: What?

I looked down

Me: Nothing

He lifted my chin up to look at him.

Him: Talk to me

Me: Where you serious about pursuing a relationship with me?

Him: I'm dead serious!

Me: but why me?

Him: Here comes the question.

I looked at him all serious

Him: ok, i like you because you not like them other guys I've been with. You stand up to me, you challenge me, even though you open your legs easy but you don't let me intimidate you.

Me: i open my legs easy?

Him: Ya you do

Me: You saying I'm loose?

Him: Well when you put it like that it don't sound right.

Me: Go to hell!

He giggled and i walked away then he grabbed me again.

Him: Okay that came out wrong I'm sorry.

Me: do you love me?

Him: What?

Me: We cannot pursue a relationship on "i like you"

Him: Uhm...

Me: Then there's no relationship come back when you love me.

He looked up and lifted his hands up a bit.

Him: God Please help me.

Me: don't drag God into this.

Him: Nini look I'm not gonna lie and say i love you, because i have never loved a girl before and neither have i been In a relationship, for me to wanna be in a serious relationship with you, that means something doesn't it?

Me: I'm not gonna fall for your smooth talk

Him: I'm being for real Nini, i don't know if it's love but i definitely feel something for you and i really wanna have you in my life and let's see where all of this will take us.

Me: You serious about this, ain't you?

Him: Yes

Me: Okay there's a few things you gotta do first to prove to me that you serious.

He folded his arms and raised his one hand up to his mouth and gave me that soo ever cute but intimidating look of his.

Me: No more bitches

Him: done!

Me: No playing me this time

Him: Word!

Me: And no sex for a month

He looked at me for a while.

Him: does that statement come with a receipt because i would like to return it

Me: be serious

Him: a month is too much how about a week

Me: It's a month or nothing

Him: Okay fine.

Me: Last but not least We should go for an Hiv test

Him: Why?

Me: because i don't know how many girls you've been with before me.

Him: So you thinking that im Hiv+?

I looked down

Him: How many girls do you think i have been with?

Me: i don't know maybe 50

Him: Wow! So you think that i fuck every girl that i come across?

I didn't answer

Him: i don't fuck any bitch that i come across Nini, i have an expensive taste in women!

You the 5th girl I've slept with.

I looked at him all shocked.

Him: I'll do your stupid Hiv test, anything else?

i shook my head no.

Did i offend him about the Hiv test?

He started walking out.

Me: Tshepi

He turned and looked at me

Me: I'm sorry if i offended you but I'm having unprotected sex with you so i just wanna know that I'm safe

Him: i understand that, but 50 girls?

I went up to him and put my hands around his waist, and pecked his lips.

Me: I'm sorry.

Him: I'm deeply hurt.

Me: Okay how can I make it up to you?

Him: i don't know but you have to think of something

Me: How about i skip school then but only for today.

Him: That could work

Me: You such a big baby! Leme get dressed

Him: Okay you'll find me in the car.

He spanked my Ass as i was walking away, that's what you get for fucking with young boys. I quickly got dressed, took my phone and went to meet him outside, he was standing next to his mustang.

Me: i see you got your wheels

He opened the door for me and i went in, then we drove to the doctor for the test. We got there and it wasn't that full, we waited our turn then the receptionist told us to go in. I don't wanna lie i was nervous. The doctor started off by counselling us first like, i didn't have time for that. After pre-counselling he finally did the tests and we waited for the results. The results came back Negative, we were both Negative you should've seen who was all up in my face. The doctor gave us advice on how to take care of ourselves and remain Negative. When we were done we walked out to the car.

Him: In your face!

Me: Ya ya ya whatever.

He started driving

Me: so what are we going to do?

Him: i don't know. Tell me have you ever been on a Trampoline before?

Me: What is that?

Him: That Answer says it all

He drove to some place where there was alot of games, i swear Tshepiso is a kid stuck in a Man's body. We paid then went to that Trampoline of his. It was huge we took off our shoes and went inside and started jumping. Although it was a bit stupid but it was fun. We were busy jumping trying to chase each other, falling ontop of each other and kissing along the way. He was doing a couple of stunts i tried doing them too but i was horrible. We played there for a couple of minutes till i was tired, then we decided to go get something to eat. We were in jhb so i asked him if we can go pass by the hillbrow police station i really needed to know about the progress of the case.

He drove us there and we got out of the car and we went inside and i asked for the detective fortunately he was there. He took us to his office.

Him: I'm really glad you came I've been trying to get hold of you, but unfortunately I didn't have your contacts.

Me: Ya it's been crazy. So I'm here to ask about the progress of the case

Him: Well i have good news for you. Gao is not gonna hurt anyone anymore, and all thanks to you he is where he belongs, and his gonna be there for a long time.

Me: Wow that is indeed good news

Tshepi: Who is Gao?

Me: I'll tell you when we leave

Him: You truly are brave, you really helped the case.

Me: All thanks to Fanny for referring me to you
His expression changed and he looked away

Me: Detective what's wrong

Him: i don't know how to tell you this.

Me: Tell me what?

Him: Something bad happened to Fanny

Me: What happened to Fanny?

He didn't answer

Me: Detective talk to me.

Him: Gao.. He burnt her to death after finding out that she helped you escape, that is what made the case so strong against him because all the evidence pointed to him.

What was this person saying to me?

Me: Detective what are you saying to me? Where is my sister!.

Him: I'm truly sorry

He got some file and showed me the pictures, her body was burnt beyond. How can Gao do this to another human being. I felt like i was getting sick, i ran out and vomited all crying, Tshepiso came to me.

Me: Drive me home

We got to The car and we went home. I got home and i went straight to my room, i passed Dora and Sheeda at the kitchen, didn't even greet them. Tshepiso followed me.

Him: Wanna talk about it?

Me: There's nothing to talk about.

I was finally alone, i went to the balcony i felt like jumping off i stood there crying my heart has never been this broken i lost all my family, i attempted to jump off, i was on the 3rd floor, Tshepiso came just in time to hold me

Me: Leave me alone! There's nothing to live for

He didn't let me go, he held me tight and i was trying to push him off but he didn't let go, i was now crying uncontrollably that i saw a bit of tears in his eyes too.

Me: I'm finally alone! I have no one else in this world.

I said that and my knees were weak i went down on floor and he went down with me, while crying like that and him holding me tight.

I was slightly hitting him on the chest.

Me: I'm finally alone, Tshepi my mom avs dad left me, now my sister, she didn't deserve to die like that.

His voice was shaky like he wanted to cry.

Him: You not alone, you have Vic, you have sheeda, you have Dora, and you also have me. We your family now.

Me: I feel like my heart has reaped off my chest and shattered into pieces.

He also had tears falling down now. He continued holding me and kissed me on my forehead, while i cried on his chest, it was as if like he was feeling my pain too

PART 35 BROKEN SOUL

I was very heartbroken by my sister's death, the next coming days were hard on me, my depression was back. I mostly locked myself in my room i was still trying to deal with her death. Tshepiso wanted to be there for me the whole family wanted to be there for me but i kept on pushing them away. One Monday morning i decided to wake up and go to school it's been a week now and i haven't attended even a single class. I went to my bathroom, bathe then got dressed and went downstairs. The family was having breakfast but Vic was not around, he went overseas to handle some business. They all looked at me.

Dora: Nissi it's good to see you up and about.

Sheeda: How are you feeling?

Me: Im feeling a bit better thank you.

Tshepiso: Are you sure that you ready to go to school?

Me: Yes, I've missed alot of classes

Sheeda: grab something to eat first

Me: I'll stop at McDonalds and get something

Dora: no need for that, we have enough food to feed an army.

Sheeda: Yes sit down bamboo Dora will dish up for you

Tshepiso: And I'll drive you to school.

Me: Agh can you guys just stop fussing! I said I'm okay!

I seriously don't know why i was ticked off.

Me: I'm sorry i didn't mean to snap.

Sheeda: We understand bamboo. Death of a family member is never easy on anyone, but just know that we here for you and we love you.

I smiled

Me: I'll always remember that

Tshepi: I'll walk you out.

He walked me out to my car.

Him: Drive cautiously and please arrive alive.

I giggled a bit.

Him: And what do you know ladies And gentleman, the corners of her mouth are moving

Me: Don't play with me like that.

He hugged me.

Him: call me or text me when you at school

Me: I will

Him: Okay, i love you.

I smiled at him

Me: i love you too

He opened the door for me, and i got in. He stood there and watched me as i drove off. My driving was soo not good i wasn't used to it, so i was doing 80. That was the longest drive ever, i arrived at school late school starts at 8am i got there at 9:30. I parked my car then took out my bag which i didn't realise that it was open, all my books fell. I took a deep sigh and crouched to pick them up, then all of a sudden i heard a voice saying "Let me help you with that" i looked up and there in front of Me stood a very charming white guy with a beautiful smile, he looked like he was in his 30s. He was wearing black pants, black shoes, and a shirt with a white coat. He went down and helped me pick up my textbooks. When we were done pickin them up i locked my car and we started walking, while i was holding half of my books and he was holding the other ones.

Him: I'm brandon

Me: I'm Nissi

Him: Nice meeting you Nissi

Me: Same here.

Him: You know when a student drops her books it only says one thing?

Me: What is that?

Him: That it's your first day.

I smiled and looked down

Him: That means I'm right

Me: Well my first day was last week, but i missed a few classes

Him: That's gonna have a bad impact on your reputation

Me: It was a family crisis, my sister has passed on and that hit me hard.

Him: I'm sorry to hear that

Me: It's okay

Him: And i end here.

He handed me my text books

Me: Thank you.

Him: What's your first class?

Me: I'm not sure let me check my Timetable. My books fell again while i tried reaching for my timetable in my bag.

Me: Not again

Him: I'll pick up your books while you check your timetable

He picked up my books, while i checked my timetable.

Me: My first class is Pharmacology

Him: Whose teaching you that?

Me: Mr Van Scheik.

I saw his facial expression changing.

Him: You in trouble

Me: Why?

He looked at the time.

Him: Your first class was at 08:00 now it's 9:40, knowing Mr Van Scheik his very strict his gonna kick you out of class and you'll never attend Pharmacology for the whole year.

Me: Are you serious?

Him: Yes, he hates late comers I'd be running to class right now if i were you, and hope that his in a good mood.

I started walking fast. And he yelled

Him: You going the wrong way, you should be going that way by the library the building next to it that's the Pharmacology department

Me: Thank you.

I rushed there and got to The building then started looking for the lecture hall, it was NL36. I searched for it till i found it, when i opened the door i was shocked at what i saw, only white people not even a single black person. They all looked at me i felt like turning around and walking out but i had no choice. There were sitting in pairs and there was only one seat available next to some white girl, i went and sat next to her. Everyone had a book and they were writing, i sat there asking myself what was going on. We were a small class around 20 students. The girl looked at me, she was your typical blonde girl, with Glasses and pink lips she looked like a nerd but she was very pretty, probably the first pretty white girl I've ever seen. She spoke to me in a low voice.

Her: hi

Me: Hey.

Her: I'm Jessica

Me: I'm Nissi

She gave me a handshake

Her: First day?

Me: Yes

The lecturer was not around, so that was a relief.

Me: What is everyone doing?

Her: We writing a quizz

Some girl in front of us turned back and said "Shhh" giving us a cold stare. We kept quiet.

The door opened and someone came in, i didn't believe what i was seeing, was my eyes deceiving me? It was Brandon

Brandon: Are you guys finished?

The class answered yes. He collected the books, he got to me and smiled at me, i smiled back and looked down. He took the books and went to the front.

Jessica: What was that all about?

Me: Nothing.

Brandon: I'll mark this later. Let's continue from where we left off yesterday.

We all got our text books and note books to write extra notes. He prepared his slides and started lecturing. He was a good lecturer i enjoyed his class alot. After class he asked me and Jessica to stay behind. When everyone went out we went to him.

Him: Nissi right?

Me: Yes Mr Van Scheik.

He chuckled

Him: You behind but not that much so i want you to stick with Jessica she will try to help you to catch up. Read page 1-10 from your Pharmacology textbook because you missed 2 quizzes so tomorrow after school you'll write them. It's not hard just 10 questions true or false, but I'll give you a different quiz from the previous ones that we wrote, Jessica Please stick with Nissi and help her.

He looked at me.

Him: Jessica is one of my best students stick with her and you'll go far.

Me: i sure will.

Jessica: Let's go to our next class.

We walked out and went to the next class.

At least the next classes they weren't soo far ahead, they haven't written quizzes etc and i was always with Jessica. Lunch time came and we went to the cafeteria. The cafeteria was beautiful and clean, and the food was expensive. At least my bank account had 10 000 Vic had put cash for me. I bought a sandwich with juice, Jessica bought Lays chips and coke, we sat there. There was not much of black students. Some white guy came to sit with us, he was wearing a short, with a vest, flip flops and a cap. He sat next to Jessica.

Him: floozy that class took long!

He looked gay from how he was handling himself.

Jessica: Medicine is no child's play

He looked at me.

Him: And who is this scrumptious top deck chocolate sitting across Me.

Jessica: This is Nissi she's in my class, and Nissi this is Chris my friend his doing medicine

Me: Nice knowing you Chris

Him: Please call me chrissy or Flooky

He came to hug me and kissed me on my cheek.

We chilled there all talking and Laughing Chris was funny or should i say Chrissy. When we were done we went to Attend our Last class which was English and the lecturer was a bitch she gave me hell for missing school. The class was finished in an hour then we walked to the parking. Jessica was driving a mini Cooper i hugged her then got into my ford and drove, she also got into her mini Cooper and went. I didn't go straight home i went to the police station, i asked the detective to accompany me to go and see Gao i wanted to confront him about what he did, the detective hesitated at first but ended up agreeing. We took his car and drove to the Prison in Pretoria, he was to be transferred to

the one in sun city soon. We got there and did everything that was being asked of us to do then they took us into the visiting area and we sat there waiting for him.

Detective: Are you sure about this?

Me: Yes i wanna see that Bastard!

They brought him in, he had chains on his hands and feet. His face looked battered like he got a serious ass Whooping i didn't even recognise him that's how bad he looked. He stood by the door and looked at me, his other eye was closed it was swollen, i stood up too and looked at him. We gave each other cold looks.

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 36 BROKEN SOUL

I felt like really killing him i couldn't stand the sight of him. He came to sit down.

Him: What a pleasant surprise if i can put it like that.

Me: this is not a friendly visit.

Him: Then why are you here?

Me: How could you do something like that to Fanny?

He laughed.

Him: You here to ask me that?

I gave him a disgusted look.

Him: She betrayed me, i hate traitors

Me: so you decided to burn her?

He looked down, as if like he was ashamed of what he did

Him: What are you really here for?

Me: You are not a human being Gao and i wish that you rot in here!

Him: Tell me something i don't know.

I was very close to jumping across the table and finish off what they did to him.

Me: You know what's sad? Is the fact that you gonna rot in here, you will never see anyone or anything in the outside world anymore. You gonna die in here slow and painful!

Him: That might be true, but you will have to live without your family. I separated you from them then killed them you alone now Nissi!

I stood up and tried to slap him but the Detective held me.

Me: Go to hell Gao! And never come back.

He laughed

Him: I vacation there!

The Guard came to get him and took him back to his cell and he was laughing, i swear Gao was the devil himself.

The detective and i went out to his car.

Him: Are you okay?

Me: Yes he just pisses me off!

Him: His stuck in there Nissi, he is never coming out. You have to move on with your life, don't allow Gao to drag you down like this.

Me: Ya you probably right.

We drove to the police station, i thanked him for taking me to the prison and i got into my car then drove home. I got there and the house was quiet. I went to shower, then came back and grabbed something to eat then i got my books and sat at the dinning room table trying to study Pharmacology. I swear it was Greek, and frustrating at the same time. I closed the textbook all irritated.

Tshepiso walked in while i was studying, he came to kiss me but i pushed him off.

Me: Eish, can't you see that im studying?

I swear everything that Tshepiso did irritated me.

Him: And what's wrong with you?

He said that while sitting across Me.

Me: Nothing just this damn Pharmacology that i have to study!

He took my textbook and checked

Him: You have to study pharmacokinetics?

Me: Yes i have a quiz tomorrow afternoon, actually two quizzes on pharmacokinetics, shit sounds like Greek.

Him: You should've asked me to help you.

I sent out a mocking laugh.

Me: You, help me?

Him: Yes

Me: Come on be serious!

Him: I am serious

Me: Tshepiso you spend all your time with your retarded friends talking about stupid things and doing useless things, and you telling me that you can help me with this?

Nigga be serious!

Him: Ouch! Thanks for the vote of confidence

I took my textbook.

Me: Okay fine tell me something about Pharmacokinetics.

Him: Anything?

Me: Yes even if it's the definition.

Him: let me see

He started thinking.

Him: Ya this is a bit hard.

Me: Exactly! So forget

Him: give a nigga a minute I'm still thinking.

I waited for him and a full minute passed.

Me: That's it. Next time please don't ask to help me because you embarrassing yourself.

I went back to my text book. After a few seconds he started talking.

Him: Isn't pharmacokinetics a division of Pharmacology that focuses on drugs that are administered externally to living organisms? It mostly describes how the body affects a specific drug after administration through absorption, distribution, and elimination/excretion? Most importantly, The model outputs for a drug can be used in calculating the bioequivalence when designing generic drugs in most pharmaceutical companies. Such has caused a great debate between pharmaceutical companies because most scientists feel like it's harmful using that process in clinical pharmacokinetics. now the question is can this process be really used in clinical pharmacokinetics? Or does it carry alot of harmful effects to living organisms?

My jaw dropped, no like my jaw dropped for real, i was astonished and impressed at the same time.

Me: Wa.. Uhm..

I cleared my throat

Me: What did you just say?

He curved his lips a bit, and gave me a look that said "in your face"

Him: in simple English i just said "i love you"

He stood up and went upstairs all whistling

Me: Tshepi come back.

He ignored me

Me: I'm writing tomorrow love

Him: Good luck!

Is he really gonna do this to me?

.....

Haike shame Tshepiso didn't help me and i failed i got 4.5/10 in one and got 5/10 on the other quiz, i was really sad i have never failed before. Brandon or should i say Mr Van Scheik said i shouldn't beat myself with it that much it's just a quiz and i should focus mostly on my tests. Days passed and Fanny's death was easing up on me but i still had those dark days. I was very moody most of the time, i got ticked off very easily especially at Tshepiso. I came home one Friday afternoon from school all tired only to find Tshepiso and his friends at the kitchen, that irritated me they were all chatting and Laughing.

Tshepi: Hey Nini you know i wanted to formally introduce you to my dogs. This is Desau and that is T-bone, and you guys already know my lady Nissi.

They both waved at me.

I clicked my tongue.

Tshepiso: Okaaaaay what's wrong?

Me: Nothing

Him: You don't look okay

Me: How can i look okay when your friends are always here? Yoooh we can't even breath bo! Like don't yall have anything else to do rather than being here all the time?

Desaun: Yoooh what did we do?

Me: Really? "what did we do"

T-bone: Uhm i seriously think that we should probably go

Desaun: I'm with you on that.

They both stood up and went, Tshepiso gave me a pissed off look.

Him: What the fuck, Nissi?

Me: I was just speaking my mind!

Him: You have been on everyone's neck lately, what's going on? You always angry about something

Me: It's because yall piss me off

He shook his head

Him: I really can't deal with you when you like this.

He started walking away, and i pulled a chair sat down and started crying.

He came back pulled a chair and sat across Me.

Him: Come here.

I stood up and went to him, he sat me on his lap,he was wiping my tears

Him: What's wrong?

Me: I don't know i just get soo angry and emotional this days. I constantly get pissed over little things, i.... I seriously don't know.

Him: could it be that you still beating yourself over Your sister's death?

Me: i don't know.

He held me tight.

Him: Whatever is bothering you we'll get through it together okay?

Me: Okay

Him: i love you just never forget that

Me: Even though i always yell at you and all that?

Him: Yes even though you difficult sometimes.

Me: i failed my quizzes

Him: I'm sorry

Me: i blame you for not helping me

Him: I'll help you next time

Me: Tshepi..

Him: Hhmmm?

Me: You seem very smart, why don't you go to school and study something? Rather than always chilling here

Him: i already have a career

Me: Soccer?

Him: Yes. I play for Man united but the second division team though

Me: Really?

Him: Yea

Me: And how is that working out for you?

Him: It's Ayt, i just have to control my Temper then I'll be fine

Me: but I've never seen you angry

Him: And you don't wanna see me angry trust me.

All of a sudden i felt like vomiting.

Him: Are you okay?

I got off him and went to vomit on the sick.

I was feeling weird, Nauseated and lightheaded like im gonna collapse

He came to me

Him: Are you okay?

I was now in tears.

Me: I don't know, i feel like hell.

He let me rinse my mouth and sat me down.

Him: i think you need to see the doctor

Me: I've been vomiting every morning that now I'm tired, is this how I'm gonna die?

Him: No you won't die it's probably something you ate.

Sheeda came into the kitchen and noticed that i was crying.

Her: What's wrong Bamboo?

I stood up to go and vomit again.

I leaned on the sink.

Me: I'm dying sheeda

Sheeda: When did this vomiting started?

Me: A few days back

Tshepi: I think we should take her to the hospital

Sheeda: Ya go get my purse In my room.

She came to me.

Sheeda: Let's go My little Bamboo,I'm, taking you to the doctor.

I held on to her as we were walking out...

PART 37 BROKEN SOUL

I went into the doctor's office alone, while Tshepi and Sheeda waited for me at the reception.

Doctor: Good afternoon

Me: Afternoon Doctor

Him: What brings you here Today?

Is this guy serious? What brings you here? I'm sick that's what brings me here.

Me: I haven't been feeling well lately.

He looked at me

Me: I've been feeling Nauseated, i vomit most mornings, i always feel light headed like I'm gonna faint. I also been having some spotting.

Him: when did all of that start?

Me: It's been a couple of days now.

Him: Go to the toilet, there's a glass pee and call me when you done.

I went to do as i was told and called him when I was done. He went and put some test in my urine then after we went back to his office and waited. After a couple of minutes he looked at me.

Him: Congratulations you pregnant.

My eyes popped.

Me: I'm what?

Him: Pregnant

Me: No i can't be pregnant, I'm only 21,how did this even happen?

Him: It happens when you have unprotected sex.

I was really shocked and speechless.

Him: Why didn't you use a condom with your partner or use contraceptives?

Me: i... It was a careless mistake, we only had unprotected sex just once

Him: Where you drunk?

Me: No

Him: Then that's no mistake.

I can't believe how cold this doctor was towards me. I got out from his office and walked slow to the reception, and stood by the door first and looked at them. They were talking nicely and smiling my baby daddy and my Child's granny. I walked up to them, they stood up.

Sheeda: What did the doctor say?

Me: food poisoning.

Tshepiso: food poisoning?

Me: Yes, he thinks it's something I ate at school.

Sheeda: it doesn't look like he gave you any medication

Me: Yes he didn't, he said I'll be fine since i vomited i just need to drink milk alot.

Tshepi: We should change our doctor

I looked at him

Him: You had food poisoning and he says drink milk? That will worsen your condition couldn't he even say Activated charcoal? At least that's an Antidote for poisoning,it will counteract the poison.

I forgot that Tshepiso knows his story.

Him: Let me go and see him.

He started walking and i held his hand.

Me: Leave him it's fine

Him: it will take only a few minutes

Me: I just wanna go home and rest I'm weak.

Him: Okay let's go.

We walked to the car, Tshepiso drove while i sat with Sheeda at the back, i put my head

on her shoulder. We got home and Vic was back

Vic: Where are you guys coming from?

Sheeda: We took Nissi to the hospital She wasn't feeling well.

Vic: What's wrong?

Sheeda: food poisoning.

Vic: Are you okay now? What did the doctor say?

Tshepiso: he said she must drink milk

Vic: What!

Tshepi: Pissed Me off

Vic: Is it Dr Mkhwanazi?

Tshepiso: Yes

Vic: I must talk to him, that's straight Nonsense..

Me: Can't we let it go?

Vic: No we talking about your health here.

Eish mara.

Sheeda: Let's get you in bed, come.

Sheeda and i went to my room. She tucked me in.

Her: Call me when you need anything

Me: Okay

She kissed me on my forehead

Her: i love you

Me: i love you too.

She walked out.

How was i gonna explain this? Tshepiso's parents don't even know that we dating and now I'm pregnant. I sat there till Tshepiso came in.

Him: Aren't you supposed to be resting?

Me: I was

He had a mug with him, he came and gave it to me.

Him: Drink this you'll feel better

Me: What's this?

Him: Some home remedy i picked up from Pharm school

Was it safe to be drinking any remedies while you pregnant? I put it aside

Me: I'll drink it.

Him: do you think you'll be fine at around 19:00?

Me: Why?

Him: i want you to accompany to some pool party

Me: I'm not in the mood for partying

Him: my friends are going with their gfs i can't show up alone

Me: fine Ke I'll accompany you.

He yawned.

Me: Tired?

Him: Kinda. I have been feeling weird

Me: Weird how?

Him: Tired and all that.

Me: That's not good.

Him: I'll drink redbull I'll be okay

Me: can i ask you something?

Him: Shoot

Me: How do you feel about babies?

Him: Huh?

Me: How do you feel about babies?

Him: Uhm i don't know why?

Me: do you like kids?

Him: Not exactly they a bunch of ignorant little niglets.

Haike that answer says it all, though i didn't know what it meant mara i know it didn't mean anything good

Him: Why do you ask?

Me: was just curious because you don't talk about kids.

Him: We'll have kids when the time is right, not now.

I gave him a fake smile.

Him: You should prepare yourself, we'll have to leave soon

Me: Okay

He kissed me and went out. I took the mug and gulped down what was in it, i might as well harm this baby. I went to shower while touching my tummy there was a life growing inside of me, tears started streaming down. When i was done i went to clothe, put on A denim short with black stockings underneath, i wore black knee boots and a red T-shirt. I combed my weave and put on a bit of make up. I went to Tshepi's room and he was finishing clothing looking fresh as always, i stood by the door starring at him thinking how cute our child would be if they could take from his side.

Him: Are you gonna come in?

I went inside. He was wearing black and topped it off with a hat. We walked out to his car and drove to the pool party we was gonna meet his friends there. We arrived there at that house at jhb was a town house, we went inside and it was already full. We made our way around and people were starring at us im sure girls hated me at that moment.

Him: Let's go and look for my dogs.

Me: Go you'll find me here

Him: Are you sure?

Me: Yes

Him: Okay wait here, don't go anywhere.

Me: Okay

He went. I waited there while playing with my phone bored as hell Tshepiso was taking long. Then after some time i heard a voice saying "Stwetla" i looked up and it was Lindo he was with some girl, kaze ufunani la.

I looked at him.

Him: What are you doing here?

Me: i should be asking you that

Him: I'm here because this pool party is for Uj students, wena ke what do you want here because you don't go to Uj?

Me: I'm here with my bf

He laughed

Him: bf? This i gotta see this, i wanna see this guy does he have eyes? Because he sure must be blind for falling you!

Me: I'm not in the mood for your insults

Him: Look at my gf, she looks 10times better than you, this is what i roll with, i bet i look better than your bf

Me: If only you knew.

Tshepiso came when Lindo was still irritating me.

Him: Nini i couldn't...

As soon as he saw Lindo he changed.

Tshepi: Lindo.

Lindo: T-Pee

They know each other?

Me: You guys know each other?

Tshepi: Ya his my sworn enemy.

Lindo: We did the same course first year then he dropped out, tell me how are you finding daddy's money?

I saw Tshepiso was starting to get pissed

Tshepi: How is my dad's money any of your business?

Lindo: wanted to know if it's still driving you crazy!

Tshepi: Babe let's go i don't have time for broke niggas..

Lindo looked at me.

Him: You guys are a couple?

Tshepi held my hand and we started walking out.

Lindo: if only you knew how much of a bitch she is!

Tshepi stopped

Me: Let's keep on walking.

Tshepi let go of my hand and went to Lindo. He punched him hard that Lindo fell, he then grabbed him by his jacket and continued Punching him now people were watching and screaming i didn't know what to do i seriously though Tshepiso was gonna kill him. I saw Desaun going to him and he stopped the fight.

Tshepiso: She probably is a bitch, but she's my bitch!

Desaun: Let's go dog.

Lindo was on the floor bleeding, Tshepi's hand had blood. Desaun signalled to T-bone that we should leave.

We all went out, Desaun had a bottle of water, Tshepiso poured it on his hand.

T-bone: What happened dog?

Tshepi: He fucken called my Girl a bitch, i shouldve long killed that Negro!

T-bone: We can't go back there again let's all meet at Zanzu

Tshepi: Ayt man

Desaun: Let me get the girls.

They went back inside Tshepi and i went to the car and he drove. I looked at him all like now i know why he got suspended. We got to Zanzu went inside got a couple of shots while waiting for The boys. They came after an hour with their gfs. We ordered a couple of drinks and drank and i was getting tipsy the girls said we should hit the dance floor we went to dance. I wasn't that good in dancing and Tshepi was looking at me all smiling, i was enjoying myself though. All of a sudden the guys took out their phones and they were on them for a while. Tshepi looked at me he looked very angry, he whispered something to one of his friends and Walked out. That was awkward Desaun and T-bone looked at me while shaking their heads. I went to them.

Me: What's wrong?

None of them said anything, T-bone gave me his phone, it was a WhatsApp video. I played the Video and shit it was my sex tape, that Bastard Lindo has leaked it!

PART 38 BROKEN SOUL

I really didn't know how i was gonna explain myself to Tshepiso.

Me: where is Tshepi?

Desaun: He went home, his takin this pretty bad.

I was heartbroken, am i gonna lose the only guy that truly loves me?

Desaun: He said i should give you a ride home, tell me when you ready to go

Me: You can take me home now.

He called his gf and we went to his ferrari then they drove me home.

I arrived there at 23:00 everyone had went to bed. I walked to Tshepi's room i knocked but no answer i tried to open but his door was locked.

I went to my room, changed into my Pjs and got into bed. I cried myself to sleep. The sex tape has leaked, my bf hates me, I'm pregnant and his parents who happen to be my adoptive parents too don't even know that we dating. How did my life get to be so complicated in such a short period of time.....

The following day i was woken up by Sheeda. She was wearing pure white. A white long dress with white leggings, with a white veil she wrapped around her face at some point i thought she was a Muslim.

Her: Good morning Bamboo

Me: Hey sheeda

Her: get up i wanna show you something

I really wanted to sleep i had a terrible hangover.

Me: Can't you show me some other time?

Her: i wanna show you now.

I woke up went to brush my teeth and washed my face, she made me wear like her she had come with the clothes in my room. We went into some room. She unlocked and we went inside.

Her: This is a sacred room take off your flops.

I took off my flops, so did she. The room was wow had that big Buddha statue surrounded by some sticks that were burning and there were mats on the floor. She lit some candles then went to the mat and kneeled down to Buddha. She then looked at me. I am a Christian and i ain't ready to betray my religion by bowing down to a statue, i shook my head and she continued. After a few seconds she stood up and came to me.

Her: This is what i wanted to show you.

I looked around

Her: i am a buddist bamboo meaning i follow the Buddhism religion.

She took me around the room and i was starring at buddha's pics.

Her: that is Gautama Buddha, the founder of Buddhism. He was born before Chris (400 BCE) and died at the age of 80 (480 BCE).

Me: What does Buddha mean?

Her: It means "The awakened one"

Me: sounds deep

She chuckled

Her: it is believed that Buddha has lived and taught mostly in the eastern part of the Indian subcontinent. He has influenced alot of races and countries to follow Buddhism, countries such as China, Japan, Thai land, India, Sri Lanka, Cambodia, and so forth. We all have different scriptures,us Indians we refer to the Buddhavacana which is the "word of Buddha" or mainly his teachings.

Me: sounds interesting

Her: It is interesting. Buddhism has approximately 488-535million followers making it the first religion to have So much followers.

That was a big number i won't lie.

Her: I'm showing you this because you are my daughter and if it interests you then you

can be a buddist. We are very peaceful people.

Me: i don't mean this in a bad way, i respect you and i respect your religion too, but..

Her: but?

Me: I'm a Christian and i have been raised as one for quiet a long time now, and i would like to keep it like that.

She smiled at me.

Her: I understand.

When we were done looking around and her telling me more about Buddhism which fascinated me that they believe in getting reborn after you die. When we were done we went our separate ways.....

My weekend was just on the down low, Tshepiso was hardly home he didn't wanna talk to me, wasn't responding to my WhatsApp messages and calls, i mean if he acts like this over a sex tape only Heaven knows how he would act if he found out that im pregnant.....

Monday came and i was going to school, i woke up and bathe, got dressed, and made my way downstairs to eat breakfast. Tshepiso was Eating breakfast in the kitchen and Dora was offloading dishes. I went and greeted only Dora answered.

Tshepiso: Thanks for the breakfast Dora I'll eat in my room.

He stood up took his plate and went upstairs.

Mara why was he acting like this? Can't he talk to me about this, like an adult.

Dora: You've been scarce this days

Me: Ya i have been, school has been making me scare

Her: Would you like something to eat?

Me: Yes please, i would like some pancakes with honey syrup and make me a shake, put milk and a chocolate syrup with ice cream and fruits. Don't be stingy with the chocolate syrup.

Her: What a combination.

She made me breakfast and ohh Lord it was heavenly. She stood there looking at me

Me: Why you looking at me like that?

Her: You look very beautiful, you glowing

Me: Really?

Her: Yea and you putting a bit of weight, your breasts are getting bigger and firmer what's going on?

Eish Dora mara.

Me: i.. It's just that I've been stress free lately

Her: No that can't be it.

I looked down

Her: You pregnant aren't you?

I hesitated in answering her at first.

Her: Nissi

Me: Dora please you can't tell anyone

Her: So you are pregnant?

I nodded my head yes.

Her: Ya Nissi you never seize to amaze me. Who is the Father? Because i haven't seen you bringing any boy here.

I was embarrassed at what she was asking, i don't want her thinking that im a Gold digger.

Me: It's... It's Tshepi.

She hit the table with her dishwashing cloth.

Her: ikhanda lakho lisebenza kahle mara? (are you mental stable)

Me: Sis Dora i didn't ask for this to happen

Her: does he know?

Me: i haven't told him.

Her: Aike kuzomele umtshele sisi (you'll have to tell him)

How do i tell him when he told me that he don't like kids mara eish.

I ate breakfast, went to my car and drove to school. I arrived there and went to Attend my classes. I was quiet most of the time that Jessica noticed and confronted me during lunch. Jess and Chris they have been good friends to me.

We were all sitting at the cafeteria, they were eating but i wasn't.

Jess: Nissi what's wrong? You haven't been yourself today.

I started crying, Chris came to comfort me

Chris: Talk to us Floozy what's wrong?

I might as well tell them.

Me: i.. I have a sex tape that my bf found out about.

Jess: You have a what?

Me: Sex tape

Chris: Wow girl you getting your kardashian on! i like.

Chris always took things lightly as if like it's a joke even when they are serious.

Jess: Wow i don't know what to say

Me: And that's not all

They looked at me

Me: And I'm pregnant

Jess: Oh no!

Chris: Girl your life has soo much drama I'm starting to think you some kind of a celeb

Jess: Whose the Father?

Me: my.. My step brother who happens to be my bf too

Jess: Define step brother

Me: His parents adopted me.

Jess stood up

Her: This is Blasphemy! I've heard enough yall let's go to class

Chris: Classes don't start until 14:00 it's 13:30

Jess: Let's go to the library or something i need to get my mind off this.

Jessica panics very easily.

We went to the library and Chris stayed comforting me. When the clock struck 14:00 we went to Attend our last class, then after i went home. Tshepiso was at the sitting room with his friends when i got there, they looked like they were discussing something serious i stood by the door listening..

Tshepiso: So Desاون I'm counting on you dog

Desاون: I'm gonna make it happen

Tshepiso: get Spanish fly man we have to drug her, and i want it to be a 3 some at a club! And after that i want her to fall pregnant i wanna ruin her future, i want her to be a young struggling single mom so his brother will know better than to mess with me again!

What were they talking about?

Desاون: i got you Dog

T-bone: Aren't you taking this far dog?

Tshepi: Dog he did a sex tape with my girl he has to pay

T-bone: His sister is 19 dog just started varsity you sure, you wanna ruin her life like that

Tshepi: i don't care dog!

I accidentally dropped my car keys that's how shocked i was they all turned to look at me.

Tshepiso: I'll be right back

He came to me and took me into the kitchen.

Me: i know you angry but don't seek revenge, if you do this vendetta between you and him won't end

Him: I'm trying to do what i can to fucken protect you! If Vic finds out about the sex tape his gonna kill you, and sheeda will be devastated.

I disappointed alot of people..

He started walking away

Me: i don't know why you soo mad because we were not together when the sex tape was made

He came back to me all charging I stepped back i ain't seeing him that mad

Him: It's not that you have a sex tape that bothers me, but it's that you didn't tell, then i have to fucken find out about it from my worst enemy Nissi?

Me: I'm sorry

Him: What did i say to you? Didn't i say that I'm scared of getting hurt? That's why i don't wanna get into a serious relationship?

Tears were streaming down now.

Me: I'm sorry Tshepi but that's the past, i mean you also have a past

Him: don't compare my past to yours. I'm not innocent but my past is clean, and your past sounds like some fucked up pornography!

Me: Wow!

Him: What am i gonna hear next? That you were a stripper or prostitute?

I swallowed my saliva hard

Me: thanks for the vote of confidence.

Him: You know Nissi ever since i started dating you, have i ever hurt you?

Me: No

Him: That's how much I'm committed and serious about you! But wena instead of meeting Me halfway what do you do? Otla Kamasepa fela!

Tshepi was really angry. He looked at me clicked his tongue and went back to his friends, leaving me all crying there.

PART 39 BROKEN SOUL

I walked up to my room heartbroken, Tshepiso hates me. I put my bag down and laid in bed all crying and thinking, i wanna abort i can't keep this baby especially not after i know that things between me and Tshepiso are not good. I seriously felt like dying i didn't wanna live this world is too cruel for me to live in.....

Someone knocked while i was crying like that. I stood up, wiped my tears and went to open the door, it was Vic.

Him: Can i come in?

Me: Yes.

He got in and sat down.

Him: How are you?

Me: im fine thanks and you?

Him: im okay. You look like you have been crying

Me: It's nothing

Him: You know you can talk to me about anything

Me: i know

Him: Anyway I'm here to check how school is going

I haven't been doing good at school, i think it's because of the stress but luckily i haven't written any major tests.

Me: School is a bit tough

Him: When are you starting with your major tests?

I got my timetable out and showed him.

Him: You have to study hard for this tests so you can get a good year mark.

Me: I'll try

Him: If you get stuck ask Tshepiso to help his very smart and he did this subjects.

Me: i don't understand why he doesn't get a qualification like the rest of us

Him: he passed matric when he was 17, got 14 Distinctions

Me: Isn't matric 7 subjects?

Him: He was taking foreign subjects too

Me: ohw

Him: After finishing matric he went to wits studied medicine passed but didn't wanna go back the following year. He then did pharmacy passed but still dropped out, his last attempt was At Uj that still didn't work.

I don't why smart people do that.

Me: He could be far.

Vic: He never finishes whatever he starts, even this soccer thing i spent around R2mill supporting him while he was overseas doing his soccer trials, i even had to pay for the trials and look where that got him? His back home. We go through this with him every year.

Me: i seriously don't know why he does that

Him: You should talk to him maybe he will listen to you.

Me: Me?

Him: You guys are brother and sister now and you seem pretty close

Me: i don't think...

Him: Nissi i want you and Tshepiso to run my company hand in hand as my kids, I'm old I'm about to retire and i don't wanna leave my multimillion Rand/Dollar company to anyone else.

If he only knew that Me and Tshepiso are not getting along.

Me: I'll try to talk to him.

He stood up

Him: Thank you

He started walking

Him: Before i forget. Tomorrow when you come back from school you might not find us here. Sheeda and i we going to Cape Town for a few days.

Me: To?

Him: Some honeymoon retreat it's gonna be different couples

Me: Okay no problem

Him: Take care of yourself and remember that you the only daughter I'll ever have

Me: i will

Him: I love you

Me: i love you too

He walked out. I sat down and let out a deep sigh i seriously need a break from life.....

.....

I didn't go down for dinner that night i just bathe and slept, sheeda let Dora Bring food for me.

I woke up the following day and did my daily routine, bathing and preparing for school, then i drove to school. I got there in time for my first class which was Pharmacology. Mr Van Scheik taught us as always and asked me and Jessica to remain behind after class and we did.

Brandon: Nissi i am very worried about your performance, you have been slacking you only passed one quiz and you didn't even pass it that well. I mean we approaching semester tests and I'm scared that you won't be able to pull through.

Tell me something i don't know

Brandon: Jessica have you been helping her like i asked you too?

Jess: I have but..

I gave her a serious look

Her: i have been helping her Mr Van Scheik

Brandon: You have to take your work serious Nissi your results at the end of the year will help you to get to varsity don't take what we do here lightly.

Yooh he made it sound like i said i don't wanna learn.

Me: I'll work hard Sir

Him: If you need help my door is always open

Me: I'll remember that.

Brandon: Good now go to your next class ladies.

We walked out all silent. When we got to The passage i sat down and started crying.

Jess: No Nissi come on

Me: I'm tired Jess. I can't take this stress and pressure anymore i just wanna die

Jess: You don't mean that

Me: No i do

She sat down next to me

Her: we'll get through this put extra hours of studying you can come to my flat on weekends or i can come to your house.

Me: sounds so easy Jess but im still carrying a child that i don't want.

Her: Have you tried talking to someone about that?

Me: No, i wanna abort would you accompany me to the clinic after school?

She looked at me all shocked

Me: Please Jess, if i can get this thing out of me then It will be minus one problem.

Her: i don't support your decision but I'll be there for you because that's what friends do.

Me: Thanks

She hugged me and we went to Attend the rest of our classes. After school we went to clinic she was following me with her car. We got there and went to the reception to enquire, the receptionist told us that she will book me for next week and it was gonna cost R2000, she made me fill a form.

Jess: Are you sure about this?

Me: Yes i am

I filled the form and we went after. I drove home all emotional. The house was quiet i figured that sheeda and Vic already left. I went to my room and put my things down. I took a shower then wrapped a towel around my body then took out my text books and sat on the bed trying to study but it was hard from how emotional i was. Singing always make me feel a bit better so i closed my eyes and started singing a song that i relate too.

Me: "somebody told me once that pain is a game we all gotta play But why am i in overtime and sudden death every other day

I know that for the good of life there's a price we all gotta pay.. But I'll pay till I'm poor and i still don't know what Is to have a good day

I sang that song with too much emotions and i gave it my all didn't care that i was making noise. When i was done i heard someone clapping their hands, i opened my eyes and i didn't realise that Tshepiso had been standing by the door listening to me.

Him: Why you never told me that you have the most beautiful voice ever?

I shrugged my shoulders.

He came and sat next to me.

Him: We have to talk

I looked at him

Him: We can't go on like this Nini, it's not healthy for the both of us.

That sounded like a break up

Me: Are you breaking up with me?

Him: No, Never.

He held my hands

Him: I love you Nini, and I'm sorry that i have been acting cold towards you lately just that this sex tape thing really stirred me up.

Me: No need to apologise, i probably would've acted the same too.

Him: If we gonna do this again then we gonna do it right.

Me: im listening

Him: If there's anything that i need to know Please tell me now and we'll work through it.

Eish i can't tell him about the baby, Tshepiso made it clear that he don't want kids

Me: There's nothing

Him: Are you sure? Because if there is something else that you not telling me then i hear it from someone else we Done Nini.

Me: i swear there's nothing.

Him: Okay I'll take your word for it.

He looked at me, that was an awkward moment i was blushing.

Me: What?

Him: Sorry, what are you doing?

Me: Trying to study

Him: Want some help?

Me: Yes please

Him: Okay

He took my textbook opened it then closed it and looked at me again

Me: Please talk because you making me feel uncomfortable

Him: Sorry just that..

Me: just what?

Him: You soo damn beautiful and it's like you getting more and more beautiful everyday, even them boyz were saying that "damn dog you've got the most sexiest gf ever"

I blushed.

Him: is it a new cream that you using or something?

Me: could be

Him: But it's not your face only even your body your breasts look hella dope, you getting thicker i mean your thighs, like what's happening?

He was making me really blush i mean I've always had insults from boys especially Lindo telling me that im ugly etc.

Me: You playing with me

Him: i swear on my life. I'm sitting here thinking to myself that damn how am i gonna help my lady study when she's looking this hella fine!

I smiled and looked away.

Him: You even wanna make me sing love songs right now.

I laughed

Me: Really you sing?

Him: a bit

Me: yeah right! You always on those fuck fuck rap songs of yours

Him: i know other songs

Me: like what?

Him: Just songs

Me: Okay sing one local song for me

Him: Any song?

Me: Yes

He cleared his throat

Him: Okay there's one song that i always hear

Me: Okay sing it.

He stood up

Him: don't laugh

Me: i won't

He looked at me then started singing.

Him: Ngeba siyathandana uyala ubasithandane silale emdongeni

My eyes popped i swear.

Him: ndibanjwa nguwe uyala uba sithandane silale emdongeni

He sang that line with one hand on his chest and the other hand pointing at me. Eish mara my own SA trey songz i was blushing and i put my hands on my face,he came to remove them and continued singing, instead of saying "Nomvula" he would say my name I swear that made me to have butterflies in my tummy.

PART 40 BROKEN SOUL

Tshepiso and i had the best time of our lives for the next coming days that Sheeda and Vic weren't around. No sexual intercourse took place he was still on probation. It was a Saturday morning when we woke up and he decided to help me study because next week i was starting with my major tests i was starting with Pharmacology on Monday then after the test i was gonna go to the clinic to have the abortion. Yes i was going ahead with the abortion I'm not gonna let a baby stand in the way of me and Tshepiso having a good relationship, because things are very good between us and i didn't want any hiccups anymore.

Me: Do you think they will ask me to Define and explain things?

Him: No its multiple choice all the way just pick and choose, it's easy but tricky.

Me: That's better

Him: Are you getting a hang of it though?

Me: ya just The ANS (autonomic nervous system)

Him: We'll tackle that one later it needs a full day because it's very tricky.

We studied for hours and Tshepiso was a good Teacher some information was getting in i was to write 3 chapters Pharmacodynamics, Pharmacokinetics, and the ANS.

He even had past papers that we practiced with they were of great help i won't lie. After about 2 hours of studying i was dead tired i started yawning.

Him: Let's take a break before you pass out.

Me: It's about time

He chuckled

Him: You don't like studying do you?

Me: i don't like studying Pharmacology it's difficult

Him: not really, i got through it very easy.

I looked at him.

Me: You very smart do you know that?

Him: so i have been told

Me: Then why don't you get yourself a qualification?

Him: i don't really like books.

Me: but you get through it like it's nothing. How about you get yourself a degree maybe in Pharmacology and work for your dad.

He gave me that side smile of his.

Him: Did Vic put you up to this?

Me: No.

He looked at me

Me: He just wants you to take over the family business, he needs someone he can trust.

Him: That's not my Dream Nini.

Me: But soccer ain't working out in your favour either.

He gave me an astonished look.

Me: i said that without any offense intended.

Him: i don't wanna work for Vic

Me: But...

Him: No nini this conversation really ends here.

There is nothing you can say when this person has made up his mind.

Him: Let's go and grab something to eat.

I closed my books and we walked out with him walking behind me.

Him: When is this ridiculous Probation ending?

Me: two more days

Him: it sure felt like forever.

Me: You'll be fine.

We got into his car and drove to spur. We got there and went in, the waitress got us a

table, and also gave us the menus.

I ordered buffalo wings, Ribs, T-bone steak, and for dessert I was gonna have a chocolate ice cream. Tshepiso just got himself ribs and a beverage only.

Him: You sure are hungry.

Me: Yes I am.

Our orders were sent to us after like 15min, and I just went in for the kill with Tshepiso looking at me as if like his jaw was gonna drop.

Me: What?

Him: Are you gonna finish all of that?

Me: Yes.

Him: Are you sick or something?

Me: No I'm just hungry. Look Tshepiso I am under a lot of stress and pressure about the tests.

Him: So stress is making you eat this much?

I nodded my head because my mouth was full.

After eating our lunch we went to pick n pay I still wanted to get some more treats.

Him: Are you trying to be an Elephant?

Me: Are you trying to say I'm fat?

Him: No but that's where you heading

Me: You have a way of putting words.

I pushed the trolley all mad leaving him behind.

Him: Nini..

Me: Leave me alone!

I went and got me some snacks, biscuits, Ice cream just all that junk. Tshepiso wasn't following me anymore I wondered where he went, I walked around looking for him and he was standing at the exit with some girl all talking and laughing. I stood there looking at them all pissed when he saw me he hugged the girl goodbye and came to me.

Him: Are you done?

I was mad, pissed, and jealous

Me: Who was that?

Him: Just someone I know

Me: Someone you know or your gf?

Him: Someone I know.

Me: Mxm Whatever!

We went to pay then walked to his car. He put the plastics at the back and we went in. I strap on my seatbelt with him looking at me

Me: This thing of you looking at me is getting old now.

Him: I'm just trying to make out this jealousy that's written all over your face.

Me: I wasn't jealous

Him: I never said you were

Me: Then start driving!

We drove back home.....

None much happened for the rest of the weekend, just studying and studying and studying.....

Monday came and I woke up at 4am I was too nervous about the test I went over my notes again till it was time to bath and prepare for school because the test was exactly at 9am. When I was done preparing for school I went downstairs and Sheeda was setting up the table.

Me: I didn't know that you were back.

Her: Morning to you too.

Me: I'm sorry, Good morning.

Her: We came back last night think you were already in bed.

Me: I thought the retreat was gonna be for a couple of days

Her: Vic was called back by his company there's some crisis that arose.

Me: That's not good

Her: But i enjoyed even though it was short

Me: Then that's good

She smiled at me.

Me: I have to go before i miss my test

Her: ohh bamboo i forgot that you starting today.

Me: I'm starting with Pharmacology

Her: Good luck then.

I kissed her on her cheek then went out as she was yelling (don't you want something to eat)

I ignored that and went to my car then drove off.....

I got to school and Jess was waiting for me at the parking, i got out took out my bag locked my car and went to her. We hugged then rushed to class. We got there just in time and took out seats. Mr Van Scheik gave out the question papers and answer sheets then we started writing. It was indeed multiple choice and it was 1hr30min. I finished mine In an hour wasn't soo bad was everything i expected. I waited for Jess outside and she didn't take that long. We walked to my car and drove to the clinic we wasn't gonna attend the rest of the classes. We got there and went to the receptionist who looked my name up and told me to take a seat she will call me when it's my turn. We sat there and waited Jess was all nervous i swear that she was the one who was gonna do the abortion. After a few minutes the receptionist gave me my file and directed me on where i should go.

I got to the ward and found a nurse with the doctor, i gave them my file and they told me to go and change into the hospital gown. I went to the bathroom and changed then decided to pray while i was at it i mean this is the biggest thing id ever done. I got out of the bathroom and went to sit on the bed. I wasn't gonna do this while I'm wide awake i asked the Doctor to give me general anaesthesia he denied at first but i begged him till he agreed. I was given the general anaesthesia and after a few minutes i blacked out... Im not sure how long the procedure took but i opened my eyes still a bit drowsy and the nurse was standing next to me.

Her: Welcome back

Me: Are... Is.. Th..

Her: Shhhhh you should get some rest.

I slowly put my hand on my tummy

Me: Is my ba.. Did...

Nurse: we did the abortion, everything is done just get a bit of rest you can't leave while you still drowsy like this.....

I had this heavy sleepiness i squinted my eyes until i passed out.

PART 41 BROKEN SOUL

I felt someone shaking me, i slowly opened my eyes and it was Jess.

Jess: We have to go it's 18:00

I slowly sat up straight and took a deep breath.

Her: How are you feeling now?

Me: still drowsy.

My throat was dry i asked her to get me something to drink, she walked out.

I i tried getting out of bed but i felt some pain in my womb, i knew then that they really did the abortion. Jess came back with the doctor who allowed me to leave. I went to change the hospital gown and put on my clothes then jess and i waked out. She handed me a bottle of water while we were walking out and i took a sip.

We walked to my car and got in.

Jess: at least we got through that now i can go on with my life.

I leaned on the starring wheel and started crying.

She put her hand on my back.

Me: i don't even know why I'm hurt i mean isn't this what i wanted?

Jess: You have every right to be emotional, you've just lost your baby.

Me: i don't know if I'm ever gonna forgive myself for this.

She continued on rubbing me on my back till i finished crying. I know that some of yall will say why am i crying because this is what i wanted right? But this is how i feel and i cannot change how i feel. I am hurt, i am shuttered, i just killed my own baby I'm a Christian i don't even think that God promotes what i did now. We got to school and jess got out and said her goodbyes to me and told me that i shouldn't beat myself about this. I smiled at her then watched her as she Walked inside the college. I drove straight home still a bit emotional. When i got there, i took my bag and got out of the car, locked it and went inside. Everyone was at the sitting room along with Dora looked like they were Playing a game of some sort.

Sheeda: Here comes the baby girl of the house, how are you my darling?

Me: I'm fine thanks.

Vic: How did the test go?

Me: It was everything i studied

Vic: That's good.

Tshepiso: Come we playing a game, you can be in our team

Sheeda: You wish, she is a girl so she will be with the girls.

Dora shifted a bit from the couch and told me to come and sit,i went and sat next to her.

We were all sitting down with Sheeda standing in front of us holding some flash cards.

Sheeda: Okay Bamboo this game is called "30 seconds" i will give you and Dora a clue then you guys have to guess what it is and if you guessed right we get a point. Do you understand?

I nodded my head yes.

Sheeda: We have to get a point we already 2 points behind.

She looked at the flash card then turned it down.

Sheeda: Okay my darlings it's something that's round.

Tshepiso started laughing, Vic slightly hit him on his shoulder.

Tshepiso: That's why you guys will never win.

Dora: You'll have to give us more than that.

Sheeda: You can put chocolate chips on it

Dora: What?

Sheeda: You bake it

Dora: cake

Sheeda: No something else.

Tshepiso: I'm enjoying this, it's actually blowing my mind.

Sheeda: Come on girls.

Unfortunately we didn't get what Sheeda was saying so we ran out of time and lost.

Tshepiso went up and his father got it from the first clue, and it was our turn again.

Sheeda: Let's give Nissi this one.

I stood up and stood before them

I took the cards and checked them then put them down.

Me: It's green.

Tshepiso laughed again

Vic: You guys are never gonna win this game while you coming up with such clues.

Tshepiso: And they making it hard for me not to laugh.

Sheeda: Another clue..

Me: It's.... It is..

I couldn't go on, i was too hurt about the abortion especially because i had a pain in my abdominal area that reminds me of what i did. I tried to stop the tears but i couldn't they just fell down.

Me: I'm sorry, i can't do this..

I put the cards down and ran up to my room i opened and closed the door then threw myself on my bed all crying. How am i gonna live with the fact that im a murderer, and to make it worse i had spotting that also reminded me of what i did. After a while i heard the door opening and closing. I lifted my head to check who it was and It was Dora. She came to sit next to me.

Her: the others wanted to come up but i stopped them and said I'll talk to you because we understand each other. What's the matter?

I shook my head.

Her: Is it hormones? Pregnancy is not easy.

I didn't answer her.

Her: Have you told Tshepiso?

I shook my head no

Me: I can be there when you tell him, to give you moral support.

Me: That won't be necessary anymore

Her: Ngoba? (because)

Me: There's no baby Dora

Her: What do you mean there is no baby?

Me: i.. I.. Aborted

She put her hands on her head.

Her: Haibo Nkosi yami imihlola yani le engiyizwayo (Dear Lord what am i hearing)

I cried again, she sat there looking down shaking her head.

None of us said anything for a sweet 3 minutes. Dora broke the silence after a while

Her: So you telling me that Tshepiso doesn't even know that you were pregnant?

I nodded my head yes.

Dora: Kodwa Nissi why didn't you tell him?

Me: He said he doesn't want kids Dora okay? How was i gonna raise a baby alone plus his parents were gonna be disappointed when they hear that im pregnant and maybe kick me out too.

Her: You probably right but either way you should've told him.

I kept quiet.

Her: Hai Nissi Kodwa uyabona amanyala ongifaka kuwo "do you see the mess you putting me in" i work for this people and they hate unreliable people, if they fi...

Me: How will they find out? Are you gonna tell them?

She kept quiet.

Me: Look Dora no one else knows beside you and me and I'm not gonna tell.

I couldn't count Jess because she doesn't live here nor visit.

Dora: I can't..

Me: Dora please i trust you not to tell, i can't lose this life and the love that Vic and Sheeda gives me, they like the parents I've never had don't mess up the blessings that God has given me.

I was gonna use every emotional blackmail tactic That the ever is out there to make sure that Dora doesn't tell.

Dora: I can even lose my job for keeping such!

Me: You won't if you just keep your mouth shut! *shouting*

She looked at me.

Me: Sorry I'm just frustrated..

We heard a knock at the door, we looked at each other.

Me: Come in.

There door opened and it was Sheeda.

Sheeda: Dora can you please give us some privacy.

Dora looked at me, then after looked at Sheeda.

Dora: Ofcause Madam

Dora stood up and Walked out. Sheeda came to sit next to me.

Sheeda: I'm hardly there for you both of us are too caught up in our lives that we don't even make time for each other.

She looked at me.

Her: What's wrong Bamboo? And don't say it's nothing.

I really didn't know what i was gonna say to her.

I looked down and kept my silence.

Her: I think i know what's wrong.

I lifted my head up and looked at her.

Her: It has to do with a boy doesn't it?

I might as well say yes to that.

I nodded my head yes.

Her: What happened?

Me: i... My..

I sighed.

Me: My bf and i we fought

Her: Is it your first fight?

Me: Yes

Her: First fights are always the hardest, why did you guys fight?

Me: we.. He.. I saw him kissing another girl

Her: Shuuuu! That's not good

Me: Ya it's not.

Her: So what is your take on this?

Me: i really don't know

Her: well unfortunately i cannot tell you what to do mainly because i don't know how much he means to you, all i can say is make a decision that's gonna make you happy and make sure it's a decision you won't regret.

Me: i will and thank you.

She kissed me on my forehead.

Her: i guess you won't be having dinner with us then

Me: Yes i won't

Her: It's okay just don't let this get to you that much you still have tests to write.

Me: i won't

Her: Okay then Goodnight

Me: Night

She smiled at me and Walked out. Phewww! That was close. I stood up and went to shower then put on my Pjs. Tshepiso texted me if he can come i said no I'm tired i wanna sleep, and he didn't push further. I got in my bed and closed my eyes till i fell

asleep.....

In the morning i woke up and prepared for school. I took my bag and Walked downstairs, Tshepiso was at the kitchen. I tried turning back but it was late he saw me.

Him: Morning

Me: Morning

He came to kiss me,then looked at me.

Him: How are you feeling today?

Me: I'm okay

Him: That's good to hear

Me: ya.. Uhm i need to go don't wanna be late for school

Him: It's still early

Me: Jess and i we meeting at the library so i don't wanna keep her waiting.

I kissed him goodbye and started walking away.

Him: Nissi i know.

I stopped and turned back

Me: Know what?

Him: That you pregnant.

I literally dropped my bag.

Me: wa.. Ho..

I was speechless

Him: remember when we took you to the doc?

I nodded yes

Him: i called him the following day and he told me that you pregnant

Oh my word, this is not good.

Me: What happened to patient confidentiality?

Him: So you are pregnant?

I looked down i was soo scared, what was i gonna tell him?

Him: Why didn't you tell me?

Me: i.. I was scared..

Him: of what?

Me: You said that you hated kids and i didn't know how you were gonna react to this.

Him: I don't hate kids, even if i did hate them but i would never hate my own flesh and blood.

Ohh Lord why are bad things always happening to me?

PART 42 BROKEN SOUL

It's not supposed to be like this! I mean why did this have to happen right after the abortion.

Me: i should sue the doctor for giving away information that is Private and confidential

Him: he didn't wanna tell believe me but circumstances forced him to talk, plus you also lied on him, the milk situation remember?

Me: But still that doesn't give him the right to tell you.

Him: You talking as if like you didn't want me to find out that you pregnant.

You damn right about that. He came to me and held my hands.

Him: Look i know that i gave you a reason to hide this pregnancy from me and i don't blame you.

Me: im just worried that we both young for a baby, you 22 and I'm 21, and I'm still at school so..

He kissed me while i was busy talking like that, and pulled out after a few seconds.

Him: i don't know about you but i want this baby and yes we young but we gonna make this work.

Me: did you think about what you saying?

Him: It's been around 2 weeks since i found out so i did alot of thinking and I'm ready.

Me: Ain't you concerned that it's gonna Taint the "fresh boyz" Brand? Phela i heard you guys talking about some girl should abort.

Him: no one is gonna force you to abort,if the dogs ain't ready to accept this then I'll have to remove myself from the brand.

Tshepiso was really serious about this baby situation.

Him: i couldn't think of anyone to have a baby with other than you. All the girls I've dated before they weren't babymama material and I'm saying that in a good way.

I was feeling somehow while standing there.

He put his forehead against mine.

Him: We in this together, we gonna make this work, we a team I'm not gonna let you go through this alone.

Tears wanted to fall but i was trying to hold them back.

Him: i love you Nini

Me: i love you too

His phone rang when he was trying to kiss me. He took it out and checked the caller ID.

him: It's the coach,i have to take this.

Me: Okay Leme go.

Him: I'll see you later.

Me: Okay.

I walked out while he was answering his phone.

I walked to my car got in and started crying. How am i gonna tell Tshepiso that i killed his baby? I probably should lie that i miscarried that's the only way out of this mess.

After doing some crying i drove to school. I got there and took my bag out and as always it was open and my books fell again. I let out a sigh and banged the door of my car. I crouched and picked them up and Brandon came to help me.

Brandon: You still have this habit of yours i see

Me: im clumsy as hell.

He chuckled. We both stood up and he handed me my books.

Me: Thanks

I locked my car and started walking away.

Him: Nissi

I turned around to face him.

Him: i have started marking the test scripts and i should say that you did very well, did better than i thought you in the top 5,of people who passed with exemptions.

Me: Really?

Him: Yes you should check the results after school they will be in the notice board.

Me: I sure will.

I started walking to class i was so excited all smiling alone at least something to smile about.

I went to class, my first class was English i went inside and i was late Mrs Botha was standing in front of the class busy talking.

Her: Ms Sibiyi you should know that my class starts at 8:00 sharp now it's 8:15 next time please don't bother to come in.

Me: Sorry

I went to sit down next to Jess.

I leaned over to whisper to her.

Me: Things are not going well

Her: Can we talk about this later

Me: It can't wait..

Mrs Botha noticed that we were talking.

Her: Ms Sibiyi first of all you show up late for class, now you disrupting the class.

Me: im sorry.

Her: Please take your conversation outside

This woman mara! I stood up and started walking out.

Mrs Botha: You can follow her Ms Muller

Jess: but i didn't say anything

Botha: You didn't tell her to keep quiet either

Jess stood up all irritated and followed me, and we walked out of the class.

Me: Sorry jess

Jess: Nissi we writing English tomorrow, do you know how important that revision was!

Me: Agh you know how much of a bitch Botha is! Don't worry we'll do the revision at your place later

Her: You know I'm tired of you Nissi!

Me: What?

Her: You selfish it's always you, you, you, what about me? You are self centered you only think about yourself and not other people

Me: Yooh where is all of this coming from now?

Her: It's coming from me! I'm tired of being your side kick! Either you respect me as a friend or we done!

Me: Look Jess it's not that deep you always take everything to the max!

Her: i take education very seriously! Im gonna miss the revision because of you.

Me: How difficult can English be?

Her: You see what i mean?

She said that while walking away. Mxm as if like i was gonna follow her and lick her ass, bye Felicia!

I took my phone and WhatsApped Chris asked where he is and he said his at the park i told him that im coming. I walked to the park and when i got there Chris stood up and hugged me.

Her: It's been a while Floozy

Me: It has been for real

I sat down.

Me: i thought you'll be writing

Him: im writing at 14:00 Floozy now I'm doing revision you don't know how bored i am

Me: That is boring

Him: Where is Jess?

Me: i think the library we had a fallout

Some girls were sitting not that far from us and they were looking at us then they would

talk and laugh then look at us again.

Him: What happened?

Me: You know jess she always takes everything to the max

Chris: That's Jess for you, she gets too much sometimes that I shan't Dzeal with her.

Me: Are those bitches gossiping about us?

Chris: Which ones?

I pointed at them, and Chris saw that they were gossiping about us.

Chris: I ain't finna have none of that

He stood up

Me: Where are you going?

Him: To confront! Gossipers must fall!

This is why you should never befriend Gay people they know their story. I stood up and we went up to them. It was 3 girls and they looked Tops not just your typical girls they looked like Top shayelas (expensive) and they were good looking too in the hood we call such girls Coconuts.

Chris: hi charmaine and your bitches!

They all laughed and rolled their eyes at us.

The charmaine girl looked like she had attitude but who wouldn't especially if you was good looking like that.

Her: What can i do for you Chris?

Chris: my friend and i thought that maybe there's something you want to say to us

Her: Why would i wanna say anything to yall

Ya she was feeling herself, even her accent was all coconut!

Chris: You the one gossiping about us

Her: Ohhh darling don't get it twisted im not trying to make yall relevant, i was just telling my bitches that your bitch Is dating my ex.

Me: uhm sorry to disappoint you but I'm not a bitch

She laughed

Her: bitch doesn't mean anything so relax sweetheart.

She was a yellow bone she looked mixed race she had a neatly tied bun and a red lipstick that really stood out. She was wearing a bra and a jacket that she opened at the front showing her belly ring, i think she was wearing a short too with timbaland boots,she also had piercings on her cheeks and lower lip,she also had grey eye contacts

Chris: and whose your ex?

Her: T-Pee

Me: and how do you know that we dating?

Her: because i saw yall at the mall

Ohhh now i remember her she was the one who was hugging Tshepiso at pick n pay.

She stood up with her girls she had big boobs and a bit of an ass she was just perfect ya Tshepiso knows how to pick them.

Her: Have fun with him and enjoy while it lasts because he belongs with me.

I looked at her like what are you on about bitch?

Her: we always break up and then find our way to each other again it's always like that so sweetie don't get too comfortable.

She then looked at me from head to toe and laughed then signalled to her girls that they should go and they left doing a catwalk showing us that she's got it.

The day went and i was deeply disturbed by what charmaine said and Chris told me that Charmaine is the most popular and beautiful girl at school that boys chase her left and right and girls envy her, i mean what if Tshepiso is trying to get back with her plus they looked cosy that day. After school i went to my car and drove home, Jess and i were still not talking but that will come later now i have a big fish to fry this Tshepiso and Charmaine thing is bothering me and i wanna confront him. I got home and to my surprise everyone was at the kitchen looking all serious, what was going on.

Sheeda: Come and sit down

I went to sit down.

Sheeda took a deep breath.

Sheeda: Tshepiso told us some news that... That somehow you guys were dating and then you fell pregnant it's a story that i can't quite put my finger on it.

I wanted to say something but my throat raised no words.

Vic: Is it true that you pregnant by my son?

I nodded my head yes. They kept quiet. This is it! I'm probably gonna be told to pack.

Vic: i am very disappointed i won't lie especially because i had high hopes for you my Angel.

I looked down

Him: But at least he didn't get some random girl pregnant.

I looked at him.

Vic: i don't know what to say other than congratulations.

Sheeda came to hug me all smiling and excited.

Sheeda: Finally I'm gonna be a grandma!

That escalated very quickly i swear.

I looked at Tshepiso and he shrugged his shoulders.

They started talking all happy

Sheeda: i wish it's a girl

Vic: No it should be a boy

Sheeda: We already have a boy

Vic: Yes i want another boy so he can take over his grandpa's legacy

Tshepiso: What if he wants to be a soccer player?

Vic: I won't allow that.

I looked at them all happy smiling and Laughing talking about the baby eish, then i looked at Dora and she was shaking her head.

Aii what am i gonna do now?

PART 43 BROKEN SOUL

I laid in my bed that night looking up and thinking. Had i not come here my life will not be this complicated, ohh mama what do i do now? I wish you were here. With Tears falling i thought of Fanny too, i mean she wasn't thee Perfect sister but she always got me out of situations. I heard a knock on my and i sat up straight. The door opened and Tshepiso walked in,he was carrying a blue adorable teddy bear. He came and handed it to me.

Him: For the mom to be.

I took it, and looked at it.

Me: It looks adorable thank you.

He sat down.

Him: You look down what's wrong?

Me: It's nothing.

I kept quiet, and looked at the teddy bear squeezing it. Tshepiso was quiet and i looked at him, he was looking at me.

Him: i can see that something is bothering you.

Me: i.. It's just that im still trying to get used to this pregnancy situation.

Him: i know it's scary to you, it's even scary for me too but I know we gonna make it through together.

I gave him a fake smile.

Him: i was talking to the coach in the morning

Me: How did that go?

Him: he wants me to come back next month my suspension is over.

Me: Ohw that's great news.

It was indeed great news for him, but not soo great for me i mean how are we gonna make this work when his 15 hours from me or so?

Him: But I'm not going.

Me: Why?

Him: i have other priorities now

Me: but soccer is your life

Him: You wrong, you and my baby are my life.

That was truly sweet.

Him: so i took Vic on his offer, working for him.

Me: i thought you didn't wanna work for Vic

Him: I don't have a choice now i have to step up to my responsibilities i wanna take care of you and my baby and not Vic

Me: When are you starting?

Him: Tomorrow

Me: That's too soon

Him: better soon than never.

Me: What will your position be in the company?

Him: Acting CEO Vic Is gonna train me first and teach me how the company works and that position comes with a big fat cheque of 45 000 a month and when I'm a full time trained CEO I'm getting 75 000-100 000 a month.

Those figures left me with my mouth open.

Me: That's a lot of money

Him: That's nothing compared to how much the company makes a month.

Me: How much does the company make a month?

Him: Can't tell you

Me: Why not?

Him: You'll faint.

I hit him on his shoulder and he laughed.

Him: How was school?

Me: Good, ohh and my lecturer said i passed the pharm test im in the top 5 of people who passed with distinctions.

Him: That's my babe.

Me: No its all thanks to you

Him: Nah its because you smart

Me: You think so?

Him: Yes.

I smiled.

Me: And you know what's interesting?

Him: Yea?

Me: i met your ex gf

He looked at me

Me: Coconut charmaine

He chuckled

Me: What's her deal?

Him: What you talking about?

I imitated her

Me: "don't be comfortable me and him always find our way to each other"

He laughed.

Me: It's not funny, you started Messing with bitches?

Him: the only bitch I'm Messing with is the one im looking at.

Me: Give me your phone

Him: Why?

Me: i want to know if your statement is true

Him: No

Me: And why not?

Him: because you have to trust me

He said that and kissed me on my cheek.

Him: Good night, and tomorrow i have a surprise for you don't stay at school for that long.

I threw the teddy bear at the door as soon as he closed it.

Me: Whatever

I laid back again on my bed, i wanna call Zuko and talk to her but she's too judgemental i can't talk to her about any of this, i kept on thinking till i fell asleep.....

I woke up in the morning and prepared for school i was to write English at 14:00. When i was done preparing i went downstairs and i saw my man eating breakfast he was wearing a suit with his dreads nicely tied at the back. He wasn't sitting down he was standing, i stood halfway busy admiring what was mine. Have you ever seen a hot guy wearing a suit? I swear i almost lost my mind. He smiled when he saw me.

Him: don't you know that it's rude to stare at someone while they are eating?

Me: im just fascinated by the suit.

The suit was Navy blue and suited him perfectly.

Him: i can't believe that they made me wear this thing.

Me: Ain't you happy that you gonna get a break from wearing hats?

Him: i love my hats.

I walked up to him and put my hands around his waist.

Me: You look hot in a suit

Him: Well thank you Ma lady.

He kissed me, and we heard someone clearing their throat.

Sheeda: do keep in mind that there's other people who live in this house.

We chuckled. And looked at her.

Me: Good morning

Tshepiso: Sheeda.

Sheeda: Morning love birds

I blushed.

Her: Ready for your first day?

Tshepiso: Yea i think so

Sheeda: Alright then Vic said you'll find him at the office.

Tshepi: Okay

Sheeda: and your cousin Poonah is coming to drop off her son, she wants me to babysit for 2 weeks because she's going on her honeymoon with her husband.

Tshepi: i forgot that she's a newlywed.

Sheeda: and i want you both here, Nissi must meet our family

Me: I'll be here.

Sheeda: Go on then kids before both you become late.

Me: Okay bye

Tshepi: bye

We started walking

Sheeda: Aren't we forgetting something?

Tshepi: Ahhh mom come on I'm old now! I'm gonna be someone's father

Her: But you still my moon pie

He went and kissed her on her cheek. Then after she looked at me

I also went up and kissed her on her cheek, and walked out.

Tshepi: don't you want me to drive you to school?

Me: i have a car

Him: But you don't have a license

Me: i have learners

Him: You lucky you haven't been busted.

Me: Fine you can drive me.

We went to the driveway and there was a black Mercedes-Benz C220 parked there.

Me: ohh so that's why you want to drive me to school?

Him: I'm rolling in class now pecks of being a CEO

The Mercedes was beautiful i don't wanna lie. He drove me to school and dropped me at the gate kissed me goodbye and said he will pick me up later. I took my bag and went it.....

Nothing much happened at school just attended classes and wrote the test which was a bit difficult. Jess Still gave me a cold shoulder she didn't chill with me and Chris during lunch was chilling at the library even when we were attending classes she sat far from me i looked at her like shame uzaba strong. Tshepiso was to fetch me at 16:00 and i went to wait for him at the main gate. Charmaine showed up in her BMW with her coconuts and stopped next to me, and rolled down her window

Her: Nicky right?

Me: NISSI

Her: You say it like your name is important like who are you, the Queen of England?

Her friends laughed.

Me: What do you want?

Her: I was wondering if you want a lift?

Me: No thanks

Her: come on don't be like that, i understand how difficult the life of being broke is.

They laughed again.

I saw Tshepi's mustang approaching me.

Me: im not broke and my ride is here.

He stopped closer to us. He got out of the car and i approached him he had changed the suit and went back to wearing his fresh boyz clothes. I hugged him and kissed him. He took my bag and put it at the back, i was looking at charmaine as i was getting in the car,

i flashed a conniving smile.

She felt like dying i swear, she hit the steering wheel put on her glasses and drove off like a mad person. I laughed.

Tshepiso: What's funny?

Me: Nothing. How was your first day?

Him: Was okay just alot of work, and how was school?

I took out the statement of my results from my pocket but only the pharm results were there. I was in the 4th place with 80% Jess was the highest with 95%. I showed Tshepiso and he was happy, he leaned over and kissed me.

Him: And to make this occasion perfect.

He took out a blind fold.

Him: Put this on

Me: Why

Him: You can't see your surprise

I took it and put it on,then he drove. He drive for a while that i was getting tired of the blind fold. After a few hours he finally stopped the car and got me out of the car still blind folded.

Him: Are you ready?

Me: Yes.

He took off the blind fold and before me stood a big beautiful house.

He hugged me from behind.

Him: This is our new home

I was shocked, speechless and all of that.

Me: It's ours?

Him: Yes, even though you from the Ghetto but you belong in a home in the mountains.

I was so happy and anxious at the same time the house was beautiful and the other houses surrounding it were beautiful and big it was in a porch neighbourhood.

He took me by my hand and we went inside it wasn't fully furnished but the furniture that it had was beautiful.

Him: so do you like it?

Me: i love it, how did you get all of this and when did you buy it?

He put 2 of his fingers on my lips

Him: Questions later. Now i want us to check out our bedroom.

He picked me up with my legs wrapped around his waist and facing him, we were kissing.

Him: i missed you

Me: i missed you too

We were bumping into the wall as we were walking and we would laugh. We finally got into our bedroom which was empty only had a carpet and he had prepared a lil romantic treat for us, champagne, strawberry and cream, some of the strawberries were dipped in chocolate

We went and sat down all drinking champagne and feeding each other strawberries till we started kissing and kissing got him ontop of me.

Him: is what we are about to do safe for the baby?

Me: It is safe.

I was happy because we had unprotected sex and had two rounds he came inside of me so i could possibly fall pregnant, see life has a way of sorting itself out. Our sex life is great and this time around we had crazy sex or maybe it was because we haven't had sex in a while.

When we were done we dressed up and drove home it was around 18:30 we held hands in the car all smiling at each other. We got home and the family was in the sitting room i saw a baby prem, tjo mina i forgot about the cousin. Sheeda was busy rocking the baby who was crying Vic was holding the baby's bottle Dora was trying to blow air for the

baby, sheeda looked frustrated.

Sheeda: Where have you guys been?

Tshepi: We went somewhere sorry.

Tshepiso went and took the baby from sheeda.

I went to give Vic my results and he smiled when he saw that i passed.

Him: Those are good results my Angel

Sheeda came to look too,she smiled

Her: Wow bamboo you smart.

Me: Thank you

Tshepi: Okay can the attention be on Keegan please

I stood up and went to take the baby from him and started rocking him while slightly tapping him on his butt and he stopped crying. He was a very beautiful baby boy looked 3 months or he was still soft and tiny.

Sheeda: do you know how much i tried to make him stop crying

I laughed a little. He was falling asleep,but when i tried to put him down he cried.

Me: Sheeda come and take him

Sheeda: Wow look at the time hun don't we have that thing?

She looked at Vic

Vic: What thing?

She gave him a serious look

Vic: Oh ya that thing let's go.

They stood up and started walking

Sheeda: everything of his in his bag, i love yall but i have to go

They walked out. I looked at Dora

Her: don't look at me im a maid.

She walked out too. I looked at Tshepi

Me: It's just you and me my love.

Him: You know what i forgot that i have to meet up with the dogs and I'm already late

Me: No don't do this to me

Him: i seriously have to go, just give him his bottle he will fall asleep.

He kissed me on my forehead and left. I looked at the baby he was still crying what am i gonna do? I have 0 experience with babies.

PART 44 BROKEN SOUL

I babysat Keegan on my own without anyone's help, i swear that was the worst night of my life. I never knew that babies can be this much demanding at some point i felt like literally crying especially when he cried for nothing at all. I threw myself on the couch taking a deep breath when he slept. I was very tired. Tshepiso came back after a few hours.....

Him: How's my baby doing?

I ignored him i was mad as hell.

Him: Was it that bad?

Me: Was it that bad? Are you for real? It was horrible

He came to sit next to me.

Him: i just wanted you to practice

Me: Are you telling me that im gonna take care of the baby on my own?

Him: No that's not what I'm saying, all I'm saying is that you need to get the full experience.

His phone started beeping and he took it out and checked, then clicked his tongue and put it back in his pocket.

Me: Who was that?

Him: No one important

Me: It's charmaine?

Him: not everyone is charmaine.

Me: Yeah whatever

I said while standing up and going to my bedroom.....

Weeks went and things were going good at home Keegan was still around and now i have grown close to him and i enjoyed every moment i spent with him. Life was very peaceful and i was done with my tests i passes all of them the lowest mark i got was 50% and that was English because vele that woman hates me. schools were closed for the first term because it was easters and Vic was very happy about my school work. What was new again was that i also got my license so i was legal to be on the road. I woke up that Monday morning today Tshepiso and i we was moving into our new home which was done now and i was very excited. I woke up with cramps in my womb that wasn't a good sign at all. I went to the bathroom to prepare my bath, the cramps were getting a bit stronger felt like period pains. As i made my way inside the bathtub i did notice that i was on my periods so that was very disappointing to find that i wasn't pregnant. I bathe then went and dressed up when i was done bathing i wore a sanitary towel and drank painkillers. I sat on my bed crying, now I'm back to square one. My phone rang as i was crying and it was Zuko i answered.

Me: Hey

Her: So you are still alive

Me: Sorry Zuko I've been hella busy lately

Her: Busy that you can't even pick up the phone and call your best Friend.

Me: I'm really sorry.

Her: Anyway I'm at jhb so i was wondering if we can meet, I'm with Sis'Mazet

Me: Now?

Her: No Tomorrow, Ofcause now!

Me: Fine I'm on my way.

Tshepi came into my bedroom he didn't go to work he took a day off because of the moving.

Him: Are you ready to go?

Me: Ya but i have to meet someone.

Him: Who?

Me: My friend whose almost like a sister to me and the woman who got me here.

Him: Can i tag along?

I looked at him

Him: i wanna see the woman who brought us together

Me: Fine you can tag along.

I stood up and we went out to his car.

I texted Zuko that we should meet up at a nearest Wimpy and she said okay. After a few minutes she texted me the details of where they are and we went to them they was at McDonalds rather than wimpy.

I went in with Tshepiso and he was looking fresh as always. I spotted where they were sitting and we went up to them, i hugged them and all that they was happy to see me.

I sat down.

Sis'Mazet: Yooh Nissi look at you Ave umuhle Nkosi yami (you are so beautiful) I'm sure you have a lot to tell us.

Me: Ya i probably do

Zuko looked at Tshepiso then looked at me and cleared her throat.

Me: This is Tshepiso yall his my bf and This is Sis'Mazet the one who got me the job and this is my best friend Zuko.

Him: nice to meet both of you

Zuko: nice to meet you too and i should say you very good looking

He smiled

Him: Thank you

Sis'Mazet: You are Tshepiso Thobekgale?

Him: Yes Mam

Sis'Mazet: Look at how grown you are the last time i saw you, you were 6

Him: i don't think we've met before

Sis'Mazet: i once came to your house my sister Works there Dora? But I don't blame you for not remembering me you were very young.

Zuko: And very good looking

Sis'Mazet: You haven't seen his mom she's a goddess he looks like his mom.

I swear they were making him blush.

Zuko: So wena Stwetla what's been happening ngawe?

Tshepi looked at me

Him: Stwetla?

Me: And you just had to say that name

Zuko: It's your name Don't be ashamed.

Tshepiso's phone rang.

Him: Sorry i have to take this.

He stood up and went outside.

Zuko: Akamuhle u brother (he is hot)

Me: Eyy sikuzwile Zuko (we heard you)

Zuko: And then manje what's with the attitude?

Me: Sorry I'm just feeling tired.

Tshepi came after a few minutes.

Him: Sorry i have to go somewhere, uhm call sheeda or Vic to come and pick you up when you done because i think I'm gonna take long and I'll meet you back at the house, our house.

He took out his card

Him: You can use my card to pay, and ladies it was nice to meet yall

Sis'Mazet: Nice to meet you too

Zuko: Bye Mr hot man.

He kissed me on my cheek and left.

I chilled with Zuko and Sis'Mazet we had a scrumptious breakfast and i told them to come and visit me at my new house some time and they agreed. I called Vic to come and

pick me up and he wasted no time. Unfortunately i got home and Keegan was already gone and i didn't meet Tshepi's cousin. I didn't do much at home i just said my goodbyes to Vic and Sheeda my clothes were already delivered at the house by a moving truck and i just got in my car and drove to my house. I got there and it was mad boring because i was alone so i hala'd at Chris and he said i should come to his flat he gave me the directions. I got into my car and drove to his place was at Pta. I got there and he welcomed me with a hug. It was a nice 2 bedroom flat.

Me: Your flat looks dope

Him: I know my Floozy please come in.

I got inside. Jess showed up from the bathroom

Jess: Floozy we have ran out off..

As soon as she saw me Her mood changed.

Chris: Jess come here

She came

Chris: Okay bitches I'm sick and tired of this tension between yall so please fix yourselves then fix your relationship im coming.

He went out. Jess and i stood there just looking around. Was an awkward moment. I decided to break the ice.

Me: i am sorry Jess you right i have been self centered and i didn't consider your feelings please forgive me. I miss you Jess okay i miss my friend.

I saw her eyes filling up with tears..

Her: i miss you too.

We went and hugged it out. Then i sat down

Her: i know you dying to tell me so tell me what's bothering you?

Me: Tshepiso knows that im pregnant

Her: say what now?

Me: Jess i tried getting pregnant again it's not working i don't know what I'm gonna do he bought us this big ass house, we very happy and i don't wanna ruin that because of my stupid mistakes.

Jess: That's very complicated.

Me: im even thinking of telling him that I miscarried

Jess: No, no,no..

Me: What else can i tell him Jess?

Her: The truth girl. This constant lying is not good the truth always finds its way of coming out so tell him now before it becomes harder

Me: i can't lose him

Her: You won't lose him if he truly loves you then he will forgive you.

Maybe jess is right i need to tell him the truth.....

I chilled with Jess and Floozy for the rest of the day and later i drove back home.

Tshepiso was back and he was on the phone with Desaun he put him on loud speaker.

Desaun: i don't know man our plan backfired

Him: How?

Desaun: bitch committed suicide after finding out That she has a sex tape now and Lindo is mad as hell

Tshepiso: Is she dead?

Desaun: Heard she's in ICU

Tshepiso: She shouldve died i want her brother to feel the same pain i felt when i saw him fuckin my girl in that sex tape

Desaun: things are mad crazy Dog. You know that Lindo's father is a taxi owner and they gonna hook up some taxi drivers dog Lindo is looking for you high and low

Tshepi: Fuck that Nigga Dog! Man his been sending me death threats talking about his gonna kill me

Desaun: i have to go Dog just always be alert wherever you go those Niggas will jump

you

Tshepi: Ayt man thanks for the heads up

Desaun: Ayt Dog be cool.

He hung up.

Me: Tshepi what's going on?

Him: Can't explain now i have to go somewhere

He kissed me on my forehead.

Him: I love you and don't wait up for me.

Me: Tshepiso what is going on?

He ignored me and just went out. I stood there all puzzled.

PART 45 BROKEN SOUL

It was now 00:00am Tshepiso wasn't back i was worried sick about him what if something bad happened to him? What if Lindo's hooligans got to him, i was pacing up and down In the kitchen thinking.. I called him again but his phone was off..... He came in at 2am

Me: Where have you been?

Him: i said don't wait up for me

Me: Are you fucken kidding me? I was worried sick about you! *yelling*

Him: Eyy Nissi don't raise your voice at me!

He said that while walking away.

Me: Stop shutting me out! Tell me what's going on we a couple aren't we?

He continued walking..

Me: if you don't tell me what's going on i swear Tshepi I'm gonna walk away from this relationship!

He stopped, then came to Me looking all pissed i was scared a bit.

Him: Okay you wanna know what's fucken going on?

I didn't know what to say i looked at him with eyes full of fear.

He took me by my hand and threw me on the couch.

Him: Your fucken sex tape caused alot of stir! I am caught up in situations that i shouldn't be caught up in! I'm caught up in a life that i shouldn't be caught in Nissi! All because you couldn't close your fucken legs! If you didn't have any bitch tendencies we wouldn't be having this conversation right now! *shouting*

I haven't seen Tshepi this mad.

After saying that he went upstairs. I sat there on that couch crying, we were once happy and everything changed in a matter of seconds, how can he say such hurtful things to me? I didn't feel like sleeping i was too heartbroken....

.....

Tshepiso came down while i was still sitting there crying he was wearing black pj pants, a black muscle vest and slippers he didn't tie his dreads they were dangling around. He sat next to me and i faced the other way so that my back can face him. He tried to run his hand across to my tummy but i yanked it off.

Him: Nini I'm sorry.

I didn't say nothing i was still crying.

Him: When i saw that video Nissi i got very angry, thinking about it still makes me angry. There is none more that kills a nigga than seeing another nigga fucking his girl.

Me: Its the past and I didn't even know that he was taking the video.

Him: I know and I'm sorry.

I don't know what his sorry was gonna do

Him: Can you face me,please

I shook my head no

Him: Please Nini..

Me: You know what hurts the most? Is the fact that you making it sound as if like it's my fault that the video was taken and it's not

Him: im sorry babe, the last thing i wanted to do was to upset you and our baby.

Hearing that breaks me even more.

Him: Can you at least face me please.

I turned Around to face him.

He wiped my tears with this hand.

Him: im a Jack ass for making such a beautiful woman cry.
Me: Are you trying to get yourself out of trouble by flirting?
Him: is it working?
Me: Maybe
He kissed me.
Him: i love you
Me: I love you too.
We continued kissing then i pulled out.
Him: What's wrong?
Me: Nothing
Him: Are you sure?
Me: What did you do to Lindo's sister?
Him: How about you don't worry about that
Me: i wanna know
Him: i don't want you knowing my business, especially such business.
He laid back and i laid ontop of him while busy giving each other baby kisses
Him: What you should be worrying about is your doctor's appointment
I didn't like where this conversation was going
Him: When are you going?
Me: im not sure I'll have to make an appointment
Him: Okay tell me so i can go with you.
Me: Okay i will..
We chilled there all chatting till we eventually fell asleep.....
I woke up in the morning and he wasn't around i didn't know if he went to work or
somewhere else Tshepiso was secretive this days.. I bathe and text Sheeda that we
should meet up for breakfast she agreed. I drove to Mugg & Bean and waited for
her.....
She came in after a while,i stood up and hugged her then we sat down.
Her: How are you?
Me: im fine thanks and you
Her: I'm not a parking ticket so i can't be fine but I'm well.
I laughed a little.
Her: That's more like it, because when i walked in here i could sense the tension in the
atmosphere. What's going on?
Me: How did you pick that up?
Her: You are my Daughter i know when something is bothering you,is the baby okay?
Me: the baby is good.
Her: Then what's bothering you?
Me: It's Tshepiso
Her: What's wrong with my moon pie?
Me: His acting total different sheeda i don't know what's wrong with him.
Sheeda: Acting different how?
Me: He gets angry easily it's just alot of things
Her: His temper
Me: Can't he see someone for that?
Sheeda: he will tell you that his not crazy.
Me: i don't know what im gonna do then
Her: You need not to stress yourself you must remain healthy for the baby don't forget
you have a life inside of you.

That was gonna be easier if i was really pregnant. Sheeda and i had breakfast then went and spent the whole day together just bonding, we went to pamper ourselves at a beauty spa, then we went and got my hair done i really enjoyed spending time with her.....

At around 17:00 we hugged each other goodbye and promised to meet up again. I drove home and when i got to my street and i saw Tshepi's mustang coming out from the house, i stopped and waiting for him to drive off then i followed him, i wanted to know what he was hiding. He drove off to this other dark place that was quiet no car passing it was far from the main road. I parked a bit far then made my way a bit closer but hid behind a tree. He was there with some other 2 guys that came out from his car they looked dangerous, they were all talking and drinking but i couldn't make out what they were saying because I was a bit far hiding behind a tree...after a while i saw Lindo's polo stopping next to them and Lindo came out and approached them.....

Him and Tshepiso started talking looked like they were having an argument of some sort judging from their body language, then after Lindo pushed Tshepiso a bit, Tshepiso went to one of the guys he was with and he handed him what looked like a gun. I put my hand over my mouth.. Him and Lindo talked again then Lindo started walking to his car then Tshepiso pointed the gun at him and shot him,Lindo went down while screaming i think he might have shot him 5times, i didn't realise that i screamed loud when all of them looked at my direction then Tshepi pointed Exactly at my direction and one of the man started coming in that direction, i backed up walking back slowly and luck wasn't on my side i tripped and fell...

PART 46 BROKEN SOUL

I didn't know if i fainted or what but i felt someone running their hand on my face, i slowly opened my eyes and saw 3 faces, 1 face i recognised the other 2 i didn't recognise. I quickly dragged myself back while i was looking at them, my head was buzzing. One guy spoke and he looked a bit old he looked like he was Vic's age group he was wearing black pants with a white t-shirt with black flowers and cross belts he topped the outfit with a hat those old hats that old niggas used to wear. He didn't have front teeth and he looked like a serious thug with Gold chains and gold rings on all his fingers, his shirt was unbuttoned at the front revealing his chest hair a bit.

I was scared my heart was pumping.

Him: So siyambulala? (so do we kill her)

Tshepi: i wish, but ke Vrou yaka.

Him: wat doen sy hier? (what does she want here)

Tshepi: Your guess is as good as mine. What are you doing here Nini?

I didn't know what to say. Tshepiso was still holding the gun all crouching in front of Me with one knee on the ground.

Guy2: Manje sizo cava senzeni ngaye? (what are we going to do with her)

Tshepi: she's gonna get up, go back to her car and drive back home.

Guy1: What if she rats us out?

Tshepiso: She rides for me so i know that she will never betray me like that, or would you Nissi?

He said that while loading the gun with bullets, i swallowed my saliva.

Me: i... Won't... Talk

Guy2: We always kill intruders what's special about this intruder? Im sure you have dated other girls before

Tshepiso: Believe me i would've long killed her but she's carrying my child, the heir to my Throne and i happen to have fallen in love with her.

I looked at him like what the hell is he talking about? What throne?

Guy2: Ehh Bra Vee Ringa nale ntwana yakho! (talk to your boy)

Tshepiso: Cava yi neh(look here) Dit is my foken Vrou! (this is my fucken wife)

uyambhodisa, nami ngiyak'bhodisa! (you kill her, im gonna kill you too)

Hebanna! This escalated very fast Tshepiso speaking Tsotsi taal.

Bra Vee: Let's all calm down! Tshepiso praat met jou persoon (Talk to your person) i don't want nonsense and loose ends!

Yooh am i a lose end? Are they gonna kill me?

This Bra Vee and the other nigga stood up and went to wait for him by the car, all looking at us.

I stood up and started Dusting myself and then i looked at him, all folding my arms.

Me: So are you ready to talk?

He looked at the Niggas then looked up like he was saying a prayer.

Me: Tshepiso what the hell is going on?

What happened next i didn't expect he punched me hard across the face, what the hack!

That punch was Hard it was like he forgot that im a woman. I bent down putting my hands on my nose

Me: What are you doing?

I looked at my hand and noticed that i was bleeding from my nose.

He didn't say nothing after that he walked away back to his Bastards they got into the car and went. I went back to my car all crying my face was bloody and i felt like he broke my nose. My shirt was also bloody what was wrong with Tshepiso did i land myself into another Gao situation? I drove off but I didn't go home i went to Jessica's place. I knocked hard at her door while screaming her name all crying. She opened the door after a few minutes and i just hugged her tight all crying.

Her: Nissi what's going on? Oh my word you bleeding.
I went inside and she closed the door.
Me: Lock it please
Jess: Nissi wha...
Me: Jess for once don't ask alot of questions! Just lock.
She locked.
Jess: Floozy come Nissi Is here!
Jess came to look at my nose.
Jess: What happened Nissi?
Chris came in just in time holding a glass of wine.
He put the glass down and started shaking his hands.
Him: Floozy what's wrong?
I sat down. I didn't know what i was gonna tell em i was in tears.
Jess: Go get the first aid kit Floozy
Chris went to get the kit,and came back with it.
Jess started to wipe the blood from my face and put a plaster on my noise.
Jess: so Nissi what happened?
I went to get Chris glass and gulped Down the wine.
Chris: Isn't she suppose to be faking the pregnancy?
Jess: Ya Nissi what is T-Pee gonna say when you show up at home drunk?
I stood up and went to get more wine from the fridge i put down the glass and started
drinking from the bottle. I cannot put what i was feeling into words i just wish that
someone could actually be in my shoes and feel what i was feeling.
Jess came to me.
Jess: Stop this madness!
She tried to take the wine bottle away from me but i wasn't letting go we wrestled for it.
Me: Jess let go!
Jess: No you are acting crazy right now what's wrong with you?
Chris came to break us off then we heard a loud bang on the door, we all stood still
looking at each other.
Whispers engulfed the room.
Jess: Who is that?
Me: I don't know
Chris: ignore it
The knock became louder
Jess: i don't think this person is gonna go away soon! I probably should open
Chris: don't open i think it might be one of my exes especially that crazy one.
Jess: I'll tell him to go.
Jess went to open the door.
Jess: Yes?
Person: Is Nissi here?
Shiit i recognise the voice it's Tshepiso! How the hell did he find me? My knees got weak
i was shaking my mind froze i didn't know what to do next.
Chris: You running away from him?
I nodded my head yes.
Jess looked at me and i shook my head,she looked at Tshepi again.
Jess: Well she doesn't wanna see you!
Tshepiso: That's not for her to decide!
He pushed Jess of the way and got in. I stood close to Chris.
Chris: She doesn't wanna see you so please leave!
Tshepi gave him a cold stare.
Tshepi: and who are you?
Chris kept quiet, I'd also keep quiet I swear Tshepiso was intimidating when he looked

serious. He looked at me

Him: Let's go home!

I shook my head no.

Him: I'm not asking you

Me: im not going home with you.

He came and tried to grab me but i held on to Floozy while my other hand was still holding on to the wine bottle.

Jess: Please leave before we call the cops!

Tshepiso took out his phone and handed it to Jess.

Tshepiso: here use my phone!

Jess didn't take it, he put it back in his pocket, then looked at me.

Him: i give you 3 days to come back to your senses! Because i didn't buy that house to live alone!

He then looked at the wine bottle.

Him: You better be not drinking Nissi because if something happens to my baby, I'm sending you to hell... Literally!!

He then started walking away pushing jess off the way again, he banged the door behind him.

We all stood there like we got electrocuted.

Chris: Okay what just happened?

Me: Omg his gonna kill me yall.

Jess took me and sat me down.

Me: Can i stay here yall? For a couple of days

They looked at each other.

Jess: i don't think so

Me: Jess please

Jess: did you see what walked in there? Nissi that guy is Bold and Arrogant!

Chris: and dangerous!

Me: Guys Please just for a couple of days

Jess took a deep breath.

Jess: fine you can stay.

I stood up and hugged them.

Me: Thank you guys.

I went to get the bottle again.

Chris: Didn't you hear what he said?

Me: im not really pregnant am i?

They just looked at me as i finished that bottle of wine. Tshepiso was really freaking me out. I didn't know how the rest of the night went because i drank and got very drunk.....

.....

I woke up the following day all messed up the hangover that i had was epic. I was now in bed how i got there i don't know. Jess opened the blinds and the sun came in.

Me: Aii maan did you have to do that?

Her: Rise and shine, get your ass up!

I stood up and went to the bathroom i was still stumbling, i looked myself in the mirror and i remembered that my nose was broken eish events of last night. I brushed my teeth and went to sit down at the main room. Jess made me some strong coffee.

Jess: Drink this i think it will help you

Me: Thank you.

I took a sip.

Me: Where is Floozy?

Her: She's gone to get some news papers

I took another sip.

Jess: You look like hell

Me: i feel like hell!

Floozy came in holding a newspaper.

Floozy: Guys did you read this? Apparently it's everywhere

Jess: read what?

He handed Jess the paper. Jess read then looked at me and folded the paper

Chris: i can't believe that this happened right under our noses!

Jess: Floozy shush!

Me: What's going on?

Chris: Some other doctor has been performing illegal abortions at some nearby clinic all the women who went to do abortion at that clinic were checked and their wombs are scarred they will never have kids.

Me: which doctor?

Chris snatched the paper and gave it to me and shit it was the same doc who performed the abortion on me, no wonder why i haven't been able to fall pregnant my womb was probably scarred too.

PART 47 BROKEN SOUL

I was very worried about the doctor situation that Jess said i must go and have my womb checked just to be safe i did go to the doctor a couple of days before and Today I was going back to the doctor to get my results i was very nervous but i was thrilled that Jess was with me. We waited until the doctor called us into his office and we went in.

Him: Good morning

Jess: Morning Doc

I didn't greet him back i was mad nervous i won't lie. He took out my file and sat down then opened it.

Doc: I'm afraid i don't have good news Miss Nissi

Me: Let me guess my womb is scarred?

Doc: I'm truly sorry.

Jess: is there any possibility that she can have babies in the near future?

Doc: I'm afraid not. Her womb will never be able to carry the baby for the full 9months, if she can fall pregnant she will miscarry the damage that has been done to her womb is beyond repair

Those words hit deep inside like small needles. My world came down crashing just like that.

Me: Thank you Doctor

I didn't wanna here more i stood up and walked out with Jess following me. We got to the car and drove to the flat. Jess didn't say anything she saw how upset i was. We got to the flat and i went to lock myself in Jess room. I didn't wanna talk to anyone my heart was sore. Why do bad things happen to me? Am i being punished for what i did to my mother? I thought we were over that but clearly God still has beef with me when it comes to that. My phone rang and it was Tshepiso i didn't wanna answer but I'll have too i mean what if he comes barging in here phela this guy is crazy! I answered.

Me: Tshepiso

Him: It's been 5 days now when are you coming back home?

Me: i don't know

Him: I'm tired of fighting with you Nini, ain't you also tired of fighting with me?

Me: im not fighting with you Tshepi you the one whose fighting with Me. You almost broke my nose and I didn't even hear you saying "I am sorry"

Him: You know what I am not gonna come there and drag you home while you kicking and screaming, I'm not gonna threaten you to come home, you gonna come home on your own.

He then hung up. How can i go back home? What am i gonna say to him what if he kills me he scares me a lot this days his been acting g brand new. I couldn't stay in Jess room forever i decided to come out after a while.

Jess and Floozy were eating.

Chris: Look who decided to come out of her shell

I went and sat down.

Jess: Are you alright?

Me: No, but I'll be fine i guess

Chris: Jess told me about what the doctor said, I'm sorry

Me: Me too. I shouldn't have done the abortion

Jess: don't kill yourself with a hypothesis, "i shouldn't" or "i shouldve" all you have to focus on now is Telling T-Pee the truth.

Me: You don't love me neh?

She looked at me all confused

Me: Tshepiso is going to kill me

Her: His not gonna kill you

Chris and i looked at her.

Jess: he probably might beat you up and throw a few things around.

I gave her a serious look

Jess: Okay maybe there's a slight chance that he might kill you but you'll die with a clean conscious

Me: Wow! So you really do want him to put me 6 Feet under?

Her: He will put you 12 feet under if he could find out from someone else. Look Nissi go home put my number on speed dial avs tell him the truth if he tries someone speed dial me and i am there with law enforcement.

Chris: Jess is right Floozy he deserves to know the truth and we'll back you up on this.

Me: i hate that the both of you are right

Jess: So when are you going back home?

Me: Tired of me already?

Jess: I'm running out of clothes

I have been wearing Jess'clothes.

Me: I'll go later

Chris: i might not be here when you leave I'm going to some Gay club

Me: Really is it nice?

Chris: too much

Me: im coming with you

Jess: thought you going home

Me: Let me have fun for the last time before I die please jess

Her: fine then yall be safe.

We didn't do much just chilled and waited for the clock to strike 19:00 so we can go.....

.....

At 19:00 we prepared ourselves Jess tagged along and we went to the club. We got there and it wasn't a bad club it was hip and happening. We had a couple of drinks then hit the dance floor after 2 hours i didn't feel like clubbing anymore so we left the club and drove to the flat. i wasn't that drunk just tipsy jess was sober she doesn't drink and Floozy wasn't that drunk too. Jess and i we share the same bed.....

.....

I couldn't sleep that night i missed Tshepiso soo bad tomorrow I'm going back home.....

I woke up the following day with a slight hangover i just drank pain killers and a couple glasses of water. I bathe and wore Jessica's dress which was short and combed my weave. My nose still looked a bit bad. I hugged Jess and Chris goodbye and thanked them for letting me stay here. I went to my car and drove home it was a Saturday morning.....

I got there and i looked around for Tshepiso and he wasn't in the house. I took my diary and went to sit on the couch then started writing. I love Tshepiso and it was hard lying

to him i have to tell him the truth, even if i don't do it face to face but I'll just write it on the diary and give it to him. I wrote with tears streaming down.

Dear hun.

I wanna start off this letter by saying that i love you soo very much, i love you more than life itself. Having you in my life has been a blessing and you have changed me, although things are not always going good between us and i know that half of our problems I'm the one who initiates them but nonetheless i still love you. I did something that im not proud of and i will never forgive myself i don't even think that you will forgive me too. I did an abortion a few weeks back or so because i was scared that if i told you that I'm pregnant you might not want to be a part of the baby's life and that your parents where gonna kick me out. Not only did i do that but I also found out that i won't be able to have kids anymore. I regret what i did Tshepiso and if i can go back in time to fix this i will. Please find it in your heart to forgive me.

Love Nissi

I closed the diary and went to put it upstairs. I prayed to God that can he please make Tshepi's heart to be lenient in forgiving me. After that i slept all day i had to prepare myself of what was gonna happen....

I woke up a bit later and washed my face and went to make something to eat at the kitchen. The door opened and Tshepiso walked in, he was wearing a suit looking good as always. He was surprised to see me he stood there and looked at me, i looked at him too. After some couple of seconds i spoke.

Me: i don't wanna fight too

He smiled at me.

Him: Come here

I went to him and he hugged me.

Him: im sorry for everything that i have put you through.

If only he knew how sorry i am. We broke the hug and he put his hands on my cheeks.

Him: i know you have alot of questions right now that you might wanna ask but can we just have this day to ourselves.

I nodded my head.

Him: i love you.

Me: i love you too

Him: And I've missed you

Me: I've missed you too.

We walked upstairs and he took off the Jacket. He noticed the diary on the bed.

Him: What's that?

Me: Nothing.

He went and picked it up.

Me: Baby it's really nothing.

Him: i wanna see what secrets you write here about whose in love with you and who you have a crush on.

He opened it, sat down and read. My heart was beating fast.

Him: You wrote me a love letter how sweet.

He Carried on reading with a smile, then after some time his smile vanished. He then closed the diary and put it away.

Him: You... You kil...

He clenched his teeth

I didn't know what to say i was very scared he stood up and came to me.

Him: We done Nissi, it's over! Pack your shit and go! I never wanna see you ever again!

Me: You don't mean that..

Him: i do. If it was soo easy for you to kill my child like that then it will be easy for you to kill me too.

He started walking out.

Me: Tshepiso wait

Him: Nissi please when i come back i don't wanna find you here because i don't wanna do something that i might end up in jail for.

He then went out. What was fucked up was that he didn't look Angry he wasn't angry at all he didn't show Emotion

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 48 BROKEN SOUL

I know Tshepi is angry he didn't mean that, all i have to do is just perform my wifely duties and Apologize then he will be fine. I went to the kitchen and cooked his favourite meal Lasagne and prepared the table. I waited for him it was now 20:00 he didn't come. I went to shower and came back. The Lasagne was now Cold so I went and put it in the oven, put the wine in the fridge and cleared the table. He came in while i was clearing the table and looked disgusted to still see me there.

Him: Didn't i say i don't wanna find you here?

Me: Tshepi let's talk please

Him: about what? So that you can keep on lying to me?

I looked down

Him: Please leave quietly before I have you thrown out.

Me: You and i we not different Tshepi, you also killed Lindo.

Him: i don't deny that! So since we both murderers we can't be under the same room or live under the same roof together because we gonna murder each other.

I went up to him, and tried to touch him.

Me: I'm sure we can fix this.

He pushed me very hard i fell ontop of the table, he was now mad.

Him: pack your shit and go, i don't fuck with Ratchet hoes!

He clicked his tongue. Ohh Wow now I'm a Ratchet whore? I saw that he was serious the best thing i could do now is just pack and go vele. I got up and Walked upstairs in tears the table had no mercy on me it hurt me i had red lines. I packed my clothes all crying why mara? I thought telling the truth for the first time would actually ease my burdens but the truth was worse. I packed up all my clothes and walked out. When i was outside i looked at the house this was never gonna be my home anymore. I went to my car and drove off. I didn't know where to go his family would probably don't want me if they hear about what i did. I passed by at Caltex garage and got gas then drove around not knowing were to go. When i was tired i pulled up on the side and slept.....

.....

In the morning i was woken up by the sun coming in through my window reality kicked in i was homeless. I can't go back to Chris and jess I've bothered them alot. There is only one Place where i could go right now and that is home. I drove to Mugg&Bean and got me some breakfast before i could take off, i was still a bit tired though. My phone rang and it was Sheeda calling, i didn't know if i should answer or what but i ended up answering..

Me: Sheeda

Her: Bamboo I'm glad you answered where are you? Are you okay?

Me: im fine sheeda

Her: I called your house and Tshepiso told me that you moved out

Me: He kicked me out.

Sheeda: Where are you staying?

Me: in my car for now

Her: That's crazy! come home. You have a home Nissi

I tried to convince her otherwise but she wasn't having none of that. After finishing eating breakfast i went to my car and drove home... When i got there i got my luggage out of the car and i was scared to go inside but eventually i did...i found Mimi and Sheeda in the kitchen baking when Sheeda saw me she came to hug me.

Her: I'm glad you are home bamboo

I smiled.

Her: i still cannot believe that Tshepiso kicked you out.

I decided that i should start telling the truth no more lies.

Me: He had every right to kick me out, i did a terrible thing sheeda i..

Sheeda: i know

Me: You know?

She looked at Mimi

Her: Dora told me everything.

Trust Dora to keep a secret.

Me: You must hate me

Her: i don't hate you, i can't hate you, you are my daughter.

Vic came in while we were still talking.

Vic: Angel what a pleasant surprise

Me: Hey..

He saw my bags

Him: That's alot of bags you going somewhere?

Sheeda: she's moving back in

Vic: Why?

Me: Tshepiso kicked me out

Vic: Why did he kick you out?

Sheeda: They had an argument you know how kids are

Vic: Then he kicked her out? What's wrong with that boy, how do you kick the mother of your child out i must talk to him!

Eish Tshepiso might tell him the truth. Vic left us there.

Sheeda: don't worry about that I'll talk to him.

Mimi: Rasheeda where is the vanilla essence

Me: Hi mimi

Mimi: Hello Nancy

Me: i have been standing here for a while and you didn't acknowledge my presence

Her: I'm half blind i didn't see it was you.

Me: Who did you think it was?

Her: a tourist

I swear Mimi is not okay upstairs.

Sheeda helped me take my bags upstairs.

Her: Just give him time Bamboo

Me: He said he doesn't wanna see me anymore sheeda

Sheeda: His still angry bamboo give him time to come around.

Me: i guess so

She hugged me then left. I took a long shower put on my leggings and T-shirt then slept i was still tired.....

Days passed Tshepiso still wasn't talking to me i tried calling him mara the calls weren't going through he probably blocked my number. Tomorrow schools were reopening. I woke up and bathe then went downstairs to eat, Dora was preparing breakfast.

I sat down.

Dora: He still doesn't wanna talk to you?

Me: Yes

The door bell rang.

Me: I'll get it.

I walked up to the door and opened, it was the same old thug man that was with Tshepiso that time Tshepiso killed Lindo, it was Bra Vee.

Him: It's a small world that we live in

Me: What are you doing here?

Him: Can you move out of my way.

I stepped out of his way he came in with a bag..

Him: How are you Dora?

I saw that Dora wasn't happy to see him

Dora: I'm fine Vusi and you?

Vusi: I'm good

He took his bag and made his way upstairs all whistling.

Me: Who is that?

Dora: That's Vic's brother

My jaw dropped

Me: Vic is related to that?

Dora: Yes as they say you cannot choose your family.

Me: Wow shocking!

How can Vic be related to that mara they look like they from 2 different worlds. I went up to my room and fixed myself up wanted to look sexy because today I'm going to get my man back it's been a couple of days now I'm sure he has calmed down. I went to my car and drove to the house...I got out and went to the door i took a deep breath and rang the door bell, i rang it for a long time no one answered as i was about to leave the door opened and i couldn't believe my eyes it was Charmaine wearing a short towel only and her hair was wet. She smiled at me but it was not a friendly smile.

Her: What are you doing here?

I wasn't gonna say I'm here to see Tshepiso i can clearly see that i have been replaced and I'm not gonna make a fool of myself in front of this girl. Tshepiso showed up he was shirtless and wearing a short only.

Tshepi: Who is that Babe?

His expression changed when he saw me.

Him: Why are you here Nissi? I told you that i don't ever wanna see you.

Me: i.. I came to get the rest of my staff but it's fine I'll come back some other time i can see you busy...

I quickly went to my car, charmaine sent out that evil laugh of hers and closed the door. Tears were burning my eyes i got into my car and cried, I'm talking about serious crying.

PART 49 BROKEN SOUL

As i walked to get in my car i thought about what he said, Tshepiso doesn't bluff if he says something he means it. I drove to meet up with Jess at some restaurant. Jess was already there she was always punctual.

Me: Hey sorry im late

Her: It's alright im used to it

I sat down.

Her: You look sexy if i didn't know id say you meeting up with a guy

Me: Ahh this is an old outfit nothing special about it.

Her: There is something special about it. It suits you very well

Me: Thank you my Floozy

I took the menu and looked at it, then after i put it down.

Jess: You not hungry?

Me: Something spoiled my appetite.

Her: What's that?

Me: Tshepiso is back in my life.

Her: What? How did that happen?

Me: You don't wanna know. Imagine his threatening to kill Brandon if he sees me with him.

Jess: That's insane! Can he do it?

Me: That guy is not mental stable he can do it for real

Jess: so what you gonna do?

Me: i have to stay away from Brandon.

Jess: don't let this guy intimidate you Floozy brandon has been a good influence on you.

Me: He has been a good friend to me and i don't wanna lose that.

Jess: This is a complicated situation.

I seriously don't know what im gonna do, i mean Brandon is a good friend, he helped me to get over this breakup and I'm truly blessed to have him. Jess and i had dinner then later i drove back home. I had to avoid Vic especially after what he heard last night i don't know how his gonna take the news. I walked up to my bedroom changed into my Pjs and slept.....

I woke up in the morning and prepared for school. Today after school i wanted to drive to Duvha Park it's been a while since i had visited my mother's grave. I walked downstairs and Dora was cleaning.

Me: Morning

Her: Morning, sit down I'll make you something to eat

Me: No thanks I'll grab something along the way

Dora: No you know how sheeda is gonna be on my neck if you skip breakfast, sit down.

Dora made me breakfast and i ate was Eating very fast though.

Her: Where you that hungry?

Me: Something like that

Sheeda and Vic came in they were arguing.

I stood up and took my bag.

Vic: Sit down!

Me: I'm gonna be late for school..

Him: you still have an hour

I sat down.

He looked at Sheeda and Dora Asnt like they should give us some privacy. They walked away.

Vic: why did you lie to me?

Me: Lied to you?

Him: You know what im talking about.

I looked down i didn't know what to say

Me: im sorry

Him: im still trying to figure out why you did it

Me: i was scared i thought everyone was gonna be disappointed and i thought that i was gonna loose a home and the only family i have.

Him: Your problem is that you don't trust us, you always assume the worst for us. You were supposed to tell us that you pregnant and see how we were gonna react rather than thinking for us.

Me: im truly sorry

Him: We a family Angel and we always gonna stand together through everything.

Me: i know

Him: so if you going through a certain situation talk to us and we will figure out something together as a Family before you put your life at risk like that.

Me: i promise

Him: Good.

He looked at his wrist watch.

Him: i have to go somewhere i won't be around for a few days.

Me: Where are you going?

Him: London.

Me: i wish to travel the world some time

Him: We can start this June when schools are closed.

Me: Really?

Him: yes. Where would you like to go?

Me: i heard Las Vegas is a great place

Him: It is indeed. We will discuss this further when i get back from the business trip

Me: Okay have a safe trip

Him: I always do.

He started walking away then stopped

Him: Take care of yourself remember you the only daughter I'll ever have

Me: i cross my heart.

He smiled and walked away. I was so lucky to have such parents. I took my school bag and went to the car and drove to school. The whole day it was gonna be revision. We attended all our morning classes till it was lunch then we went to sit at the park.

Jess: Brandon Is not around today right?

Me: im not sure.

The park was noisy nje there was alot of cars playing music and alot of people i didn't know.

Me: What's happening?

Jess: Heard there's gonna be a bash of some sort later.

Me: Okay.

Charmaine and her friends came, she was on her phone then after a few minutes "Fresh boyz" came they were driving Ferraris. Aike as always girls went crazy,all screaming etc. They got out of their cars wearing those 3 different colours looking fresh as always.

Tshepiso hugged Charmaine and kissed her.

Me: Mxm and i must stay away from Brandon.

Jess: That guy is full of himself.

I heard a voice behind saying "what did Brandon do" i looked behind and it was

Brandon.

Jess and i looked at each other. He sat down next to me. I looked at Tshepiso he was still mingling with some girls.

Me: Brandon wa.. What are you doing here?

Him: i work here remember

I didn't wanna see what was gonna happen if Tshepiso sees us.

Jess stood up.

Jess: i am going to..

Me: You not going anywhere sit down.

She sat down and i was scared as hell busy biting my nails.

Brandon: Are you guys okay?

Me: Ya we.. We good.

After some few minutes i saw Tshepiso getting into his car and left but his friends stayed behind. I put my hand on my chest all relieved.

Jess: That was a close one.

Me: It was indeed a close one..

Brandon: What's happening?

Me: Nothing, don't worry

We sat there then Brandon decided to leave said he had to do revision with some class.

We also didn't chill there that long we decided to go because of the bash there wasn't gonna be any afternoon classes.....

Unfortunately i couldn't go to Duvha anymore Sheeda took me to Kzn for the whole weekend wanted me to meet the whole family. They were very nice people and i was also happy to see Keegan again. We came back on Monday morning and i didn't go to school that day.....

The day of the Galla dinner came, was Wednesday at night, Brandon was to fetch me at home. I wore a one hand white dress the other sleeve was long. It was short and tight with a silver lining on the sides and silver heels. I curled my weave and Sheeda put a silver chain kinda thing that extended to my forehead looking like some princess. I took a silver clutch bag and i had grey eye contacts.

Sheeda: Hmmmm you look beautiful

Me: Thank you

Dora: You gonna drive all the boys crazy.

The door bell rang.

Dora went to open and it was Brandon he even had flowers. He came in he was looking handsome. He greeted and handed me the flowers Dora took them and we walked out.

Sheeda: have fun but do come back

I looked at her and smiled.

We walked up to his car.

Him: You look beautiful

Me: You don't look bad yourself.

He opened the door for me and i went in. We drove to the hotel were the Galla dinner was gonna be at. Brandon took stage as the Mc and i sat at some table. I was bored i don't wanna lie all those speeches etc. After a few hours food came in and we ate Brandon came to sit next to me. After eating champagne was served and then people started to hit the dance floor, i didn't wanna dance but Brandon forced me. While we were dancing and having a good time i heard someone talking behind me i recognised the voice i prayed that it shouldn't be who i think it is. I turned around and it was Tshepiso.

Him: i see that i didn't make myself clear

Me: What are you doing here?

Him: im here to fetch your bitchy ass!

Brandon came closer.

Brandon: Do we have a problem here?

Me: No there's no problem.

Tshepi: No actually there is a problem, you busy fuckin around with my girl.

Brandon: The last time i checked you dumped her so technically she's single.

Tshepiso grabbed me by my hand Brandon yanked Tshepi's hand off me. Tshepiso looked at me.

Him: Awu ringe nalo muntu wakho (talk to your person)

Me: Brandon please stay out of this.

Brandon: No you here as my date and here we gonna stay and enjoy our night.

Tshepiso laughed a little.

Tshepi: Ngizol'khawatha le bhari lakho (I'll hurt this fool of yours)

I seriously didn't know what to do.

Tshepiso: Brandon you better walk on Boet you don't wanna start no beef with me that i promise you.

Brandon: is that a threat?

Tshepi: i don't do threats.

Brandon: You know what's your problem? You way too confident! That no one and nothing can touch you, well let me tell you something you not God!

Tshepi: That's because i got a heart of lion that's why i ain't always looking over my shoulder.

Brandon: You don't scare me

Tshepiso: i never said i do.

Brandon: Why don't we just let Nissi choose who she wanna leave with?

Tshepiso folded his arms and looked at me so did Brandon.

Ohh Lord what do i do now. I looked at Brandon.

Me: I'm sorry...

Brandon looked down and shook his head.

Brandon: Nissi don't do it

Tshepiso gave him that side smile of his.

Tshepi: i always stay winning.

He held my hand and we walked out to his car. We got in and he drove off.

Tshepiso: that was a smart choice

After a few minutes We got to The house and went in.

Me: Where is charmaine?

Him: don't worry about that.

He kissed me

Him: You look beautiful

Me: Thank you

His door bell rang.

Him: Why don't you go upstairs I'll meet you there

Me: Okay.

i started walking up the stairs but i didn't walk all the way up i stopped halfway wanted to see what was going on. Some guy wearing all black came in.

Tshepiso: And?

Him: It's done

Tshepiso: Did you make it seem like it was an accident?

Him: Yes but she was very tough

Tshepi: don't tell me you got defeated by a bitch

Him: She put up a great fight see she scratched my face.

Tshepi: charmaine is weak even a fly can defeat her and you telling me that she almost defeated you, you turning into a pussy

Him: Anyway here are the pictures of her dead body

He handed him a camera and left. I continued walking upstairs all scared what did i get myself into..

PART 50 BROKEN SOUL

I quickly rushed into the bedroom, i took of my dress and heels along with the chain, wrapped myself with a towel and made it as if like i was about to take a shower. I was scared though what was Tshepiso doing? Who is he. I was pacing in the bedroom when he walked in, he was holding the camera. My heart skipped a bit.

Him: Look at you,looking all sexy.

He put the camera on the bed and pulled me closer to him. I was scared of him i won't lie, my body was trembling with fear

Him: Are you cold?

Me: just a bit

Him: I'll warm you up.

Me: What's in the camera

He looked at it, then took it from the bed and gave it to me.

Him: See for yourself.

I took it and checked, and my lord the Pictures of charmaine's dead body were traumatising. She died a painful death with her scalp open and her lower body squashed it seems like the car landed on her. I dropped the camera.

Me: Wa.. What ha...

Him: i think the right words you looking for are "What happened"

I looked at him

Him: i killed her.

Me: Why?

Him: because she was starting to irritate me and when i told her to leave she didn't want talking about she loves me, Pathetic!

Me: You killed her because she said that she loves you?

Him: Yes.

Me: i love you too does that mean you gonna kill me?

He smiled and came to me, he put his hand on my cheek.

Him: i won't kill you. I can't kill you, i mean how can i kill my heart because I'll be killing myself along the process.

Me: Why do you kill Tshepiso?

Him: Because i can.

He went and sat down.

Him: When i was young my parents were never around so i was raised by my uncle ko Alex and my uncle was a feared man there and still is. There was alot of violence and killings that took place in my presence, i saw things that i child should never see my uncle taught me alot of things. Sometimes i kill without a purpose Nini,i just get the urge

to kill and i kill.

Me: does Vic know about this?

Him: he did see signs that i was rebellious and that's when my mom quit her job and became a house wife then i was raised to be a cheese boy.

Me: Killing is not right

Him: But that didn't stop you from killing my baby

Are we ever gonna get over that mara.

Me: i need to shower and go I'm sure Sheeda is worried about me.

Him: i was thinking that you should spend a night here

Me: I've got school tomorrow

Him: Your school is not in America. Call Sheeda and tell her that you won't make it home tonight.

I took my phone and handed it to him.

Me: i think you should call her.

He took my phone and went out to call her. I sat down i was still thinking about Charmaine. Tshepiso was not the sweet guy i met a few months ago he was not sweet but he was just caring and soft and all that, but now he is this beast that i don't know. He came back after a few minutes and gave me my phone back.

Him: Done

Me: What about school?

Him: like i said your school is not in America, they can survive a day without you.

Me: It's revision time.

Him: so?

Me: revision Is important because I'll be writing my June exams soon.

Him: do you really wanna go to school or you just wanna see Brandon?

I kept quiet.

Him: i think it's time i do something about this guy for good.

He said that while walking to the door. I went and stood by the door trying to block him.

Me: Okay I'll stop seeing him

Him: Get out of my way Nini

Me: i swear I'll stop seeing him, I'll end whatever friendship that i had with him, just don't kill him please.

Him: Why does this guy mean soo much to you?

Me: He doesn't. He just was a good friend to me.

He squeezed my cheeks with his hand.

Him: i never wanna see you with him ever again because if i do Nissi I'm uniting both of you with Ancestors, and that's if he has Ancestors.

He let go, and my cheeks were hurting.

Him: Just because you are my heart, doesn't mean i can't kill you when you fuck me up, and remember I'm still not over the fact that you killed my baby.

How does this hot cute guy standing in front of Me get to be this heartless at such a young age!

He pinned my hands against the door and then kissed me. That kiss was sensual i wanted more and more of him, my towel dropped in the process he loosened his grip on my hands. We continued kissing and he was busy pulling my hair while his other hand was caressing my body. He then moved to my neck and gave me a couple of love bites was painful and arousing at the same time. He picked me up and made his way to the bathroom and put me next to the basin. He then got undressed and came in between my legs.

Me: im not wet

Him: i know.

He forced his way in and i felt like my vaginal muscles were tearing apart if it has one.

He pushed it in again and again.

Me: You hurting me for real!

Him: i ain't seeing no tears so you fine.

He went for it and just pumped me like we had a curfew i was screaming i wanted to cry too but tears were not backing me up, he went on and on until i started getting wet and wet and wet. Then we eventually came together. He then picked me up and we went to have one last round in the shower. This guy was a killer in everything although that was painful but it was good. When we were done we showered and then we went to bed we were both tired and we just passed out in each other's arms.....

I woke up in the morning and ran my eyes around the room he was standing in front of our long mirror busy buttoning his shirt.

I sat up straight

Me: Thought you were gonna skip work too

Him: i can't i have a company too run

Me: You looking fresh as always

He smiled and looked at my reflection in the mirror

Him: And you looking sleepy as always.

When he was done he came to me, he leaned to give me a kiss but then stopped.

Me: What's wrong?

Him: Your neck looks disturbing.

I got out of bed went to grab a towel and wrapped my body then went to look myself in the mirror. Those love bites looked horrible.

Me: What the? Were you sucking my blood or what?

Him: don't be dramatic they will disappear in a day or two

Me: i can't be seen in public like this

Him: Just put on one of my scarfs.

Her: did you think about Sheeda what she is going say?

Him: say you were beaten by mosquitoes.

Me: i hope that excuse works

Him: Why don't you just move back in

Me: I'll have to think about that.

Him: What's there to think about?

Me: There's alot to think about.

Him: Like?

Me: because although i love you but I'm very scared of you..

Him: I'll never hurt you

Me: You once broke my nose

Him: That was one incident that will never happen again.

I looked down.. He came close to me.

Him: Come on Nini let's just make everything official

Me: Official?

Him: Let's get married.

Whaaaaaaat!!!!!!!

Me: Wow! I.. Seriously don't know.. I am speechless right now.

He ran his finger on my lips.

Him: i lost you once and i don't wanna lose you again. You don't have to say yes now just

think about it.
He pecked my lips then took his car keys and Jacket.
Him: I'll see you later.
He then walked out,leaving me with such a big decision to make.

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site
please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for
supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your
friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from
<https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest
African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

PART 51 BROKEN SOUL

Tshepiso went to work and i bathe then made my way home too.. I arrive there and there was no one around not even Dora. I went upstairs and changed into a much simple outfit, and chilled on my bed wtv. My phone rang and it was Brandon, well Tshepiso Is not around so i might as well just answer.

Me: Hello

Him: Hey are you around?

Me: No i missed school today

Him: Why, are you sick?

Me: Not really just woke up late

Him: Okay was checking if you okay

Me: Thank you

Him: Do you wanna go out later? Grab something to eat it's been a while since we last did that.

Me: I'd like that.

Him: Okay just text me your address.

I text him the address and he said he will pick me up at around 18:00.

Time went and it was almost 18:00 i went to prepare myself, i know that I'm probably gambling with my life Tshepiso would probably kill me if he found out but it's not like his watching me or something.

I went downstairs and Sheeda was now around.

Her: Hello stranger

Me: Hey

Her: Looking good. Are you going somewhere?

Me: Ya just going out with a friend

Her: do i know the Friend?

Me: Uhm no..

She gave me a strange look

Her: What happened to your neck?

Shit i totally forgot about that.

Me: Mosquitoes

Her: Really? That looks very bad

Me: I'll be fine

The door bell rang

Me: I'll get that

Her: Tell him to come in i wanna see him.

I went to open the door and it was Brandon. I let him in and we hugged. Sheeda came.

Him: Are you ready to go?

Me: Yes

Him: You look good

Me: Thank you.

Sheeda cleared her throat.

Me: ohh Brandon this is Sheeda and Sheeda this is Brandon we friends.
Sheeda: and I'm her mother.
Brandon went to give sheeda a handshake.
Brandon: Nice to meet you
Sheeda looked at his hand.
Me: You supposed to touch her feet
Brandon: ohw ya sorry
Brandon tried to touch Sheeda's feet but she stopped Him halfway.
Sheeda: It's okay you don't have to do that
Brandon stood up straight.
There was silence after that.
Me: Uhm we can go
Sheeda: Have her home by 22:00
Brandon: Ofcause mam'
I gave sheeda a hug and we went out.
Brandon: Is that Vic's wife?
Me: Yeap
Him: T-Pee's mom?
Me: Yes
Him: And she's also your mom?
Me: Ya
Him: so technically you and T-Pee are siblings?
Me: sort off
Him: But yall use to fuck each other?
Me: Something like that
Him: How do yall get that right?
Me: let's not talk about that.
We went to his bike and took off. I won't lie i was scared especially because i have never been on a bike before. We went to this other white bar.
Me: We going to drink?
Him: Yes why not?
Me: It's during the week
Him: We'll be fine.
We had a couple of ciders and a tequila. I was having fun with him i made him lick the salt from my neck.
Him: What happened to your neck?
Me: Don't worry, just lick.
I'd laugh like a silly teenager when he licked the salt off me, but he wasn't drunk because he had to get me home safe.
Desaun showed up with some white girl while Brandon and i were having that moment.
Desaun: Nissi fancy seeing you here.
Me: Desaun.
He gave Brandon an awkward look.
Desaun: having fun i see
Me: Yes i am
Him: Does Tshepiso know you here with another guy having a romantic moment?
Desaun is gonna create problems for me.
Me: Yes
Desaun: Really? Then Let's call him and ask

He took his phone out and dialled his number and put him on loud speaker.
Desaun: and what do you know, it's ringing
Tshepi answered.
Tshepi: Dog
Desaun: Yeah dog
Tshepi: Sup dog?
Desaun: You won't believe the fuckery that's happening
Tshepi: Yeah?
Desaun: I'm in that white club, remember the one we once went too?
Tshepi: Ya. What about it?
Desaun: You won't believe who i bumped into
Tshepi: Who?
Desaun: Nissi, and she's with another N..
I snatched the phone from him and hung up.
Me: Why you acting like a bitch? Being Tshepi's Puppet?
Desaun: His my best friend and we look out for each other.
His phone rang again and it was Tshepiso
Desaun: I think that belongs to me
He took it and walked away to answer it.
Brandon: What was that all about?
Me: We have to go
Him: Why, we still having fun.
Me: No we have to go
I stood up and grabbed him by his hand, he finally stood up and we went. He dropped me off at the gate
Me: It's fine you don't have to come in
Him: I want too, your mom..
Me: Brandon please don't force
Him: Okay I'll see you tomorrow at school
Me: Okay bye
I hugged him and went inside the house. I passed sheeda on the couch looked like she was sleeping, i tiptoed my way upstairs.
Sheeda: How was your date?
I stopped and looked at her.
Me: wasn't a date was just 2 Friends having fun.
Her: Tshepiso called
I felt my knees getting weak.
Me: What did he say?
Sheeda: Wanted to know where you are and i told him you went out with Brandon.
Shiit is really gonna hit the fan now. I looked down busy biting my nails.
Her: You look nervous what's wrong?
Me: Nothing
Her: What's going on Nissi?
Me: It's nothing sheeda.
Sheeda: i didn't tell him that you went out with Brandon, i just said that to see your reaction
I didn't know what to say to sheeda
Her: You need to make a decision You cannot play 2 boys.
The door flung open while we were Talking and it was Tshepiso he looked angry. He

came to us i was shaking.

Tshepiso: Sheeda

Sheeda: Moon pie

They hugged each other

Sheeda: What are you doing here?

He looked at me.

Tshepiso: I'm here to fetch Nissi

Sheeda: Really, were are yall going?

Tshepi: She's moving in back with me

Sheeda: is that so? She didn't tell me

Tshepi: it was a quick decision that we made.

Sheeda looked at me and i flashed a fake smile.

Sheeda: Uhm okay then, I'll miss you i guess

She gave me a hug, and gave Tshepi one too.

Sheeda: Yall drive safely

Tshepi: We will

She looked at me for the last time then left i seriously didn't want her to leave, we watched her walking away until she completely exited the room, then we looked at each other. Out of nowhere Tshepiso slapped me very hard that i had to hold on to the couch to prevent myself from falling. He then grabbed me by my hand and took me to my room.

Him: Pack all your shit!

I didn't wanna piss him more off i packed up all my things while he was busy pacing up and down trying to calm down. After packing my things we walked out to his car and drove home. I was scared truly scared because i didn't know what he was gonna do to me.....

We got home and i wanted to take my bags from the back and he told me that we'll get them later they ain't running away. We went inside and went upstairs to our bedroom. He locked the door behind us. I was beyond scared i swear if my bladder was full i probably would've pissed on myself. He tore my shirt.

Me: What are you doing?

Him: We gonna have rough sex all night! I'm gonna fuck you until you can't walk no more!

Me: What?

Him: You the one who goes around drinking in bars with niggas, you wanna act like a bitch Nissi, then I'm gonna treat you like one!

He said while going to get some pills from the drawer.

Him: I hope you have the strength to go on all night, because this babies will make me perform the whole night.

I looked at him asking myself if this guy is mental stable?

PART 52 BROKEN SOUL

I wish i could say that Yes Tshepiso fucked me all night, it was the worse experience ever, i felt like dying and all that, but in actual fact we made love. Was the best experience and moment of my life. We made love to Beyoncé's song Drunk In love, we were drunk in love indeed. Although yes it was a long night i ended up getting tired while he still wanted to go on but he was gentle and all that, i just wish i could find the right words to describe our night of passion. I woke up that morning with a smile feeling myself loving him more and more i know that he is a difficult person and all that but please point someone to me who is perfect. I got out of bed and yes i was in a bit of pain but it was worth it because he took me places. I saw a note next to the bed with a rose ontop and the note read "enjoy your day, i love you"

As kerri hilson would say right now "i never thought I'd be in love like this" that was me because for real right now "i never thought I'd fall for him as hard as I did" ... while i was sitting there All smiling as if like cupid shot me with a love portion i took my phone and text him something that i know he really wanted to hear i text him that "Yes i will marry you" he didn't take that long he called me, and i answered.

Him: Are you serious about what you just text me?

Me: Good morning to you too

Him: Sorry, Good morning. So are you serious?

Me: Yes i am.

He kept quiet for a while.

Me: Are you still there?

Him: for the first time i am speechless. I just wish i was there now to give you the biggest hug ever.

I chuckled

Him: I love you soo much Mrs Thobekgale to be

I liked that

Me: i love you too

Him: Enjoy your day see you later

Me: You too.

We kissed each other through the phone and hung up. I sat there all crazy in love and smiling then finally i Went to bath and prepared for school. I went to eat breakfast then left for school.....

Reality kicked in when i got to school charmaine's picture were plugged everywhere, i went up to look at her. It was a pic of her sitting down at the park with a beautiful smile and books next to her. They wrote her date of birth and the day she died then they wrote "Gone to soon" i looked further and today was also her memorial service. I passed a few people who were talking about this matter some looked shocked as if like they couldn't believe that she was gone. I noticed Floozy and Jess standing i went up to them. I gave them hugs and they also looked disturbed.

Jess: Did you hear about Charmaine?

Me: Ya it's all over the school

Floozy: i still can't believe that she's gone, she was only 20

Jess: I never liked her but i am saddened by this.

Me: What happened? Was she sick?

Floozy: heard she had an accident, a terrible one. People who were at the scene are traumatised by how her body was

Jess: She died painfully.

I swear no one wanted to be in my shoes right now, how do i tell them that my bf is responsible for charmaine's death.....

Jess and i went to class we was attending Chemistry. We attended chemistry it was revision and everyone was on the charmaine situation i didn't wanna hear none about

that anymore because everywhere i turned it was charmaine this and Charmaine that.....

During lunch we went to the main gate they plugged her picture they had enlarged it, people were putting flowers and there was a big white board people were writing, R. I. P and all that. Charmaine was popular so alot of people were crying, i saw a woman whom i think Is her mother they were holding her she looked weak like she had been crying for days. After that we made our way to the main hall. Everything was white and there was her picture again. People spoke about her and i was sitting there all listening. After a while her mother stood up and went to talk she is colored and looked like charmaine, she was crying.

Her: First of all i wanna thank the school for deciding to remember my child today. Charmaine was the only daughter i had out of 3 boys, she was the light of the house, always brought laughter and warmth. She was a very bubbly child always laughing and talking. When i found out that she had passed on i.. I felt like someone had just taken my heart from me. I'm never gonna see my child again death robbed me off my only baby girl. My baby died a terrible death i wasn't there to save her I'm sure she was crying for me to come and save her and i wasn't there when she took her last breath. I would like us to remember how she lived and forget about how she died.

After saying that someone came to escort her to her seat, i was now in tears i stood up and went outside to cry. Charmaine and i weren't friends but she didn't have to die like that, one moment i loved my bf but now i hated him how can he do this to another person? I couldn't stay there anymore i went to my car and cried. After crying i drove off i didn't go home i went to some bar and drank a little. My phone rang it was Jess i didn't answer i didn't wanna talk to anyone at school.....

After a few hours of being there i drove back home i wasn't drunk just tipsy.

I got home and Tshepiso was sitting at the lounge he was sitting at the table doing some paperwork. I dropped my bag and stood across him, he lifted his eyes and looked at me.

Me: You are so evil! Do you know that?

He gave me a look as if like "what are you talking about"

I don't know if it was the alcohol talking or if it was really me talking.

Me: Do you know the trauma and guilt that you put me through today at school?

Everywhere i turned it was charmaine this and Charmaine that! What did she do to you, for you to kill her so cruel like that? Do you even have a heart Tshepiso?

He gave me that conniving side smile of his. He put the papers down.

Him: have you ever gave yourself time to learn about a lion?

Me: What's that got to do with this?

Him: Because i have a heart of a lion. I kill without a purpose and i don't regret or feel pain. A lion can go as far as killing it's own cubs and i can kill anyone i want to kill and get away with it.

Me: You gonna rot in hell!

Him: i have a house there.

Looking at him disgusted me.

Him: Why don't you go upstairs and freshen up we going out in about 10min time.

Me: im not going anywhere with you

He gave me a serious look

Him: It's not a request

I took my bag and went upstairs, i threw my bag down, how the hell did i get myself in all of this? I went to take a quick shower. After showering i went through his drawers looking for an underwear

I came across Charmaine's photos, photos of her dead body he had physical copies now. They wasn't soo pleasant to look at, i closed my eyes then i heard Tshepiso calling me i looked around and went to put them inside my school bag. He opened the door and

found me zipping my bag. Luckily i had closed the drawer.

Him: What's taking you soo long?

Me: i was looking for my clothes i think they are still in your car.

Him: Ohw ya let me get them.

He went to get them while i lotioned. He got the bags inside the bedroom and i opened them to pick and outfit. I wore black leggings with ankle boots and a T. Shirt with a leather jacket the weather had changed it was now chilly. He also changed his suit and wore all white, with a white hat. He looked good i don't wanna lie. We walked out to his car and drove to chisa nyama. We met up with his boys Desaun and T-bone. I greeted T-bone i didn't greet Desaun for shit. We all sat down they was alone this time i was the only girl amongst them.....

Desaun also ignored me he was on his phone.

Tshepi: What did you guys order?

T-bone: Nothing yet i don't like this place the food here is Terrible

Tshepi: i know what you mean but we have no choice it was Desaun's turn to pick up a restaurant and he picked this joint.

Tshepi looked at me.

Him: Do you want anything to eat?

I shook my head no.

Desaun threw his phone on the table.

T-bone: What's wrong?

Desaun: I'm just tired of seeing Charmaine's pics, she's all over my timeline dog.

T-bone: the feeling is mutual dog

Desaun: People act like she was a celebrity.

Tshepi: And she was just a mere bitch that i got tired of and decided to kill

They all laughed. I was now boiling

Me: Are you guys really this casual about someone's death?

They all looked at me.

Me: Charmaine didn't deserve to die like that, she died a terrible death alot of people are affected by her death especially her mother and you guys find all of this funny?

Tshepi: Nini people die, it's nothing new Charmaine was gonna die sooner or later it's just how life works!

Me: She was only 20

Desaun: So? She's not the only 20 year that died

Me: Was i talking to you?

Desaun: That statement didn't come with a name

Me: did i say it was meant for you? Was i even looking at you while talking?

Desaun: no but...

Me: But nothing! Shut the fuck up i don't talk to bitch ass Niggas

They all kept quiet. Then after Tshepiso broke the silence.

Tshepi: Do you need some aloe Vera dog?

Desaun: No, why?

T-bone: because you just got burned.

They both started laughing Desaun was getting pissed he stood up all mad and started walking.

T-bone: Wash your panties while you at it, you just got schooled by a girl.

They both laughed again, i wasn't laughing i was mad pissed.

T-bone: Dog i have to bounce too.

He stood up

Tshepi: Ayt cool dog

He looked at me

T-bone: I'm never messing with you anymore.

He said that and walked away....

Tshepi and i sat there in silence he then slightly squeezed my cheek, but I was busy hitting his hand off, he continued doing that.

Him: i know you wanna smile.

He kept on doing that till i smiled

Him: That's more like it

Me: mxm

Him: Wanna go home?

I nodded my head yes. We walked out of there holding hands and we drove home. We got home and i walked to the bedroom he grabbed me by my arm and pulled me closer to him. He gently pulled my weave back that was covering my left eye.

Him: im sorry for putting you through all this drama

I didn't say anything

Him: try to forget about the charmaine scandal you didn't kill her so you shouldn't feel guilty.

Me: just that seeing the pain that everyone was in especially her mom really got to me

Him: i didn't wanna put her mother through that but her child was becoming an annoying bee busy buzzing in my ear.

Me: You shouldn't have killed her.

Him: i know but she's dead now so we should all move on.

We went upstairs it was now 19:00 changed into our Pjs and went to bed. We had an early night because we were exhausted from the previous night.....

I woke up in the morning prepared myself for school as always and Tshepiso wasn't around. I drove to school and WhatsApped jess asking where she is she told me that she's submitting her Pharmacology assignment. I wondered what assignment so i went to Brandon's office to enquire. I waited for all the students to submit and went out told Jess that I'll find her in class. I closed the door.

Me: i didn't know you gave them an assignment

Him: You were absent

Me: Is there a way i can get the assignment?

He took out some paper and gave me.

Him: i want it Tomorrow

I looked at it

Me: Yooh did we do this?

Him: Yaa do you have your textbook?

Me: Let me check

I put my bag on the table and checked the textbook luckily i had it

Me: I have it.

I took out the textbook and Charmaine's photos came out flying and fell on the ground

Brandon: still clumsy

He went to pick them up

Me: don't worry i got them.

After picking them up he looked at them, i tried to get them but he was busy changing them from one hand to the other.

Him: this are... What are you doing... Nissi what am i seeing here?

I didn't know what to say

Him: Were did you get this?

Me: i..

Him: You better start talking.

I had no choice i told him the truth, and the truth almost made him faint.

Me: say something

Him: What you want me to say Nissi?

Eish this is a difficult situation.

Him: Your bf is sick!

Me: Don't talk like that his not

Him: He is! And it's only a matter of time until he does the same to you!

Me: Tshepiso won't kill me, he loves me.

Him: im sure he said the same thing to charmaine

Me: He is serious about me we getting married soon.

Him: Are you out of your mind? Did you see this pictures? Did you see what he did to her?

Me: He is not as bad as you think, despite all he is caring and loving and..

Him: You talk about him as if like his a human being

Me: He is

Him: He is not! He is a monster, he is a beast, his an animal..

I slapped him across the face.

Me: don't ever talk about him like that in my presence!

I tried to take the pictures but he stopped me

Me: Give me the pictures

Him: No I'm holding on to this

Me: Brandon let's not be stupid

Him: It's about time someone did something about this guy

Me: Do you have a death wish?

Because if Tshepiso finds out that you have this pictures you are dead!

Him: I'd rather die than let him do the same thing to you.

Brandon really is messing with the wrong person,he truly does have a death wish.

PART 53 BROKEN SOUL

Brandon didn't give me the pictures, i just hope that he doesn't do anything stupid with them. It was hard going back home to face my bf especially after what I've done. I woke up the following day and bathe, prepared for school.....

I went downstairs only to find that Tshepiso didn't go to work. Everytime I come across him I'll be scared and wondering if he had found the pics.

Me: Morning

Him: Morning wifey

That's a good sign he probably hasn't seen that the pics are missing.

Him: When are we going to start planning our wedding?

Me: im not sure because i have exams coming up

Him: When do you want us to get married?

Me: Dec

Him: That's too far, let's have a winter wedding after your exams Ofcause.

Me: Okay. Let me go to school, ain't you going to work?

Him: Naa Vic will be at work the whole day so i got a day off.

Me: Okay bye then

Him: i don't even get a goodbye kiss?

I went and kissed him goodbye then left. I drove to school, i hope Today they would've laid off the Charmaine thing. I arrived at school took my bag and went. Today it was the last day at school we was gonna get 2 weeks off to prepare for our exams. While i was walking to class i saw something that made my jaw drop, I saw Desاون and Jess all talking and Laughing, i went up to them.

Me: What the hell is going on here?

Desاون's mood changed when he saw me.

Jess: Hi Nissi

Me: Don't hi me Jess what are you doing with him?

Desاون: I'll see you later jess

Jess: Okay bye

He kissed her on the cheek and left, all giving me a spiteful look as if like i cared.

Me: What are you doing with that Punk?

Jess: We just friends

Me: Friends my left foot! I don't wanna see you with him ever again.

Her: excuse me?

Me: Where did you guys even Meet? Because he doesn't even school here

Jess: We met here and there.

Me: You can date any guy there is out there but not Desاون.

Jess: What beef do you have with him?

Me: His a spoilt brat and a player he will break your little heart.

Jess: but we can't ignore the fact that his cute.

Me: Omg did you hear a word i said?

Her: You dating one of the fresh boyz and you don't see me giving you a tough time about that.

I seriously didn't want Jess to go through what I'm going through with Tshepiso, She's too fragile she won't survive Fresh boyz are toxic.

Her: Calm down let's go get Latte's at the cafeteria.

Me: Naa that can wait i need your help with something

Her: What?

Me: Is Brandon in his office?

Her: Yes you know his always Early.

Me: Good, i want you to distract him while i get something In his office

Her: You talking about Breaking and Entering?

Me: Something like that

Her: i am not equipped for that.

This is the reason why jess won't be able to date one of The fresh boyz

Me: I'll be doing the breaking in you get him out of his office

Her: How?

I took out a pocket knife

Me: We gonna slash his tyres.

I know Jess was gonna give me a problem so i took her by her hand and we went to the parking. Today he had come with his car instead of his bike. I slashed the 2 front tyres while Jess checked the coast, we then went to his office but i waited at the corridor while Jess went to get him. After a few minutes i saw him rushing out of the building with Jess. I quickly went to his office and started searching. I searched and searched and searched i couldn't find them, where did he hide them mara. The search took forever until i heard their voices at the door.

Brandon: Where is Nissi? Is she here?

Jess: No she.....

He got in and i stood still looking at him.

Him: What are you doing in my office?

Me: Nothing.

Him: are you looking for what i think you looking for?

I kept quiet all looking at him. He got pissed

Him: Damn Nissi! Why are you going through all this trouble to Protect that monster?

Me: because his soon to be my husband and I'll remain faithful to him.

Him: Get out of my office before i report you!

I walked out with Jess.

Jess: i am really Lost what is going on?

Me: Nothing you should concern yourself about.

Her: Okay.

We attended some classes and i didn't attend Brandon's class he pissed me off. I decided to go and see Vic i kinda missed him.....

I drove to his company wasn't that far. I got there and it was a big company and beautiful too. I walked in and vele you can clearly make out that it's a pharmaceutical company because of the smell of pills. I went to the receptionist and she called him. After the call she gave me a card that said "Visitor" and directed me to where I should go.....

I stood by the door at first and watched him working, then after a few seconds i walked in.

Me: Okay I'm here to save you from you.

He looked at me and smiled.

Him: What brings you here?

Me: im here to see my Old man

Him: So early?

Me: It's 11am, and am i not allowed to visit you?

Him: No you are and I'm happy that you here. Let me give you a tour of this place since you gonna be joining us soon.

When we were walking out i noticed that at the door there was a name tag written "Mr T. Thobekgale" underneath the name it was written "CEO".

Him: His been doing very good I'm impressed with his work and commitment in this company, so i decided to make him the CEO.

Me: So you retiring?

Him: Ya it's about time, I'll just remain the major shareholder. I have 90% shares and i gave Tshepi 10% and when you start working too ill give you shares so all 3 of us can be shareholders..

Me: What will my position be here?

Him: head Pharmacist and supervisor. You will be 2nd in command.

Me: Wow i can't wait.

I put my hand in his arm and he gave me a tour of the company. Was a big company and alot was going on but i think that i will enjoy working here.

After the tour, we decided to go out and get something to eat at a nearby restaurant.

Him: im happy that you came by

Me: Anytime

We ordered something to eat.

Me: Can i ask you something?

Him: Anything my Angel

Me: Is it true that Tshepiso was raised by Vee?

He started coughing.

Me: Are you alright?

Him: I'm fine sorry.

I looked at him.

Him: Who told you that?

Me: He told me

Him: It is true.

Me: Okay

Him: Why do you ask?

Me: Nothing

Him: You can't ask for nothing, so out with it.

I took a deep breath.

Me: just that he.. His very violent and when he gets angry even the atmosphere becomes scared of him.

Vic: Has he hurt you, physically?

I looked down

Vic: Nissi has he ever hurt you physically?

I nodded my head yes

Him: What?!

Me: It was just once or twice

Him: That doesn't make it right. You are not to see him ever again.

Me: That's hard because i moved back in with him

Vic: Then you will move back in with us.

Me: Dad it's really nothing

Vic: He hits you and i won't pretend as if like i didn't hear that. What if he kills you?

What will become of me.

Why does everyone think that he will kill me.

Me: He won't kill me Vic.

Vic: i ain't taking chances. You must go and pack your bags if you not home by tonight

I'm am showing up there with cops.

Me: You would have your own son arrested?

Vic: i didn't raise no woman beater and if i do nothing that will mean I'm supporting what his doing and i don't support abuse against women.

Vic Is overreacting on this imagine if i were to tell him about the killings. We continued eating then went and spent the whole day together. I enjoyed spending time with him. I drove back home at 18:00 with him telling me that i should come home by tonight.....

I got home and Tshepiso was not at the kitchen nor the lounge. I went to our bedroom and he was there. He looked at the time

Him: Where have you been?

Me: i was with Vic, i spent the whole day with him you can call him to confirm.

Him: It's Ayt

I put my bag down and went to the dressing table and took off my earrings he came and hugged me from behind. I smiled at him.

Him: Where are my pictures?

My eyes widened

Me: Wa.. What pics?

My voice was shaky

He moved his hand up to my neck.

Him: Charmaine's pics.

Me: I don't know, maybe you misplaced them

I took his hands off me, and started walking away.

Me: im going to start with dinner

He grabbed me by my weave while i was trying to open the door.

Him: What are you not telling me?

Me: im serious i don't know where they are

Him: Either you talk or i blow your brains off right now!

I know he doesn't bluff i decided to tell him the truth.

Him: Wtf? Why would you give Brandon those pics?

Me: i didn't give him, they Fell from the floor

Him: Why did you go with them to school in the first place?

Me: I'm sorry

He started hitting my face against the door very hard.

Him: And how many times did i tell you to stay away from Brandon?

I was now bleeding, and he let me go. I just went down on the floor with my face bloody i was having a serious blackout i was very dizzy and in pain.

Him: Nissi?

I wasn't responsive, lights out.

PART 54 BROKEN SOUL

I don't know what happened or how it happened but I woke up in the hospital with a banging headache. There was no one in my ward. I slowly got out of my bed i was dizzy with a terrible headache. I sat on the bed for a few minutes trying to regain composure. I felt like my face was swollen. I stood up again and made my way to the bathroom and when i looked myself in the mirror i seriously didn't like what i saw. My face was indeed swollen i had a bandage wrapped around my forehead. I didn't wanna see no more of that i walked out to the main room. I found the nurse panicking. She was relieved when she saw me.

Nurse: Thank God! For a moment there i thought you ran away come and lay in bed. She helped me to get back in bed, Tshepiso came In with a basket of Goodies and a Barney teddy bear.

Him: Good morning

I didn't even look at him.

Nurse: I'll give you two some privacy and buzz me when you need something

Me: Thank you

She smiled then walked out.

Tshepi: How are you feeling?

I ignored him. I even turned and faced the other side.

Him: You not gonna talk to me?

I still didn't answer.

Him: Okay I'll just sit here and be on my phone.

He did as he said.....

We sat there in silence i was even getting tired of laying on one side. The nurse came in with food after a few minutes.

Nurse: Time for lunch.

She helped me sit up straight Tshepiso was sitting there with his headsets on.

Nurse: The Doctor will be with you now now.

Me: Okay

Her: I'll come back to give you your medication.

Me: Okay

She went out again. I took off the lid and it was a sandwich, then juice, and an apple with yoghurt on the side. I started eating while Tshepiso was starring at me, you know how hard it is to eat while someone is starring at you. I buzzed the nurse and she came in after a few minutes.

Nurse: What can i do for you?

Me: Can you please tell this guy to leave my ward.

She looked at him, then looked at me.

Nurse: Do you guys know each other?

Me: Yes he is my bf but i don't want him here

Nurse: Why?

Me: i just don't.

The nurse went to him and he took off his headsets. She started talking to him and he stood up then left. At least the room was free of tension. I ate my food then the Nurse gave me pills and i drank. They made me drowsy and i slept...

I was woken up by the Doctor.

Him: Good afternoon

Me: Afternoon Doctor

Him: Sorry to wake you up but i need to check up on you before I go see my other Patients

He came and started to shine a light in my eyes.

Him: How are the headaches?

Me: They come and go

Him: i don't think there's any internal damage that was done but we'll do scans.

That was a relief.

Him: If i may ask, what happened?

Ohhh i do feel like telling him everything.

Me: i fell down the stairs

I don't know why i was protecting the Bastard!

Doctor: be careful next time

Me: i sure will

The next few days were just the same thing everyday Tshepiso would come and sit and be on his phone while i ignore him but i was recovering very well the Doctor did the scans and found that there is no internal damage that was done to me.

The day came for me to be discharged i was here for two weeks and i was happy to be out, i still had the bandage wrapped around my forehead though. I signed the discharge papers and they gave me my medication, then Tshepiso came to fetch me.

Him: Are you ready to go?

I ignored him.

Him: You really are passionate about ignoring me aren't you?

I took my things and started walking out, with him following me. He opened the door for me and i went inside...we drove home in silence. We got there and i went up to our bedroom. I don't like hospital showers so i went and took a long bath then went to bed. I got my phone first and called Brandon it took me straight to voice mail, i was starting to get worried i mean what if Tshepiso killed him. I sent Jess a message that she can come and visit me then after that i slept.....

After some time Tshepiso woke me up to tell me that Jess and Floozy are here to see me and he let them inside the bedroom, then walked out closing the door behind him.

They came to hug me then sat next to me.

Jess: What happened Nissi?

There was no point in lying anymore.

Me: Tshepiso and i had an argument then the rest i think you can figure it out.

Floozy: He hit you?

I slowly nodded yes.

Jess: Wow!

Floozy: one moment you in love with someone and living happily then out of nowhere he beats you.

Jess: You need to report him.

Me: No

Jess: Nissi he beat you

Me: i pushed him too far

Jess: You are sounding like a true victim of abuse busy defending him.

Floozy: was it the first time?

Me: 3rd time i think

Jess: This is some deep information.

Me: Let's forget about it yall. Anyway have yall heard anything about Brandon

Jess: No why?

Me: I've been calling him and his phone takes me straight to voicemail

Jess: Maybe his busy i mean they preparing for the June exams.

Me: could be

Floozy: and what's going between you and Mr Van Scheik?

Me: Nothing. Why do you ask?

Floozy: because a lil birdy tweeted Me that yall are in some sort of a relationship
I looked at Jess

Jess: Yall are in some sort of a relationship which is called a friendship

Me: Yes we just friends and nothing more.

I chilled with Floozy and Jess until late then they decided to leave. I bathe and went downstairs to get something to eat after an hour Tshepiso was at the kitchen yelling at that guy who came into our house that time to tell him about Charmaine.

Tshepi: Brandon Is not that smart he could've gotten that far!

Guy: we looked for him everywhere

Tshepi: It's been two weeks now, what the fuck do i pay you for?

The guy looked at me. Tshepiso turned and looked at me too then looked at the guy.

Tshepi: You can go now and please come back with better news for me.

The guy walked out

Tshepi: Hey when did you wake up?

I still ignored him.

Him: Okay Nissi this is getting ridiculous, can you please say something because i feel like going crazy with you ignoring me.

I still kept my silence

Him: Okay I'm truly sorry about what happened babe, i didn't mean to hurt you like that.

Me: You never do.

He knelt down, and held my hands.

Him: Please forgive me Nini.

How can I not forgive him with him kneeling like that. I smiled a lil

Me: get up from the floor

He smiled too, and got up.

Him: i love you

Me: i love you too.

He kissed me.....

Weeks passed by and still no word from Brandon i even went to the college they said he resigned. I was very worried about him that i couldn't study for my exams. Things between me and Tshepiso were okay there were less fights we just had a peaceful life. One day Tshepiso received a call from an unknown number while i was sitting with him in the lounge. He answered and put it on loud speaker.

Tshepi: Hello

Voice: Hi

I recognised the voice, it was Brandon.

Tshepi: Who are you?

Voice: It's Brandon.

Tshepi: You no longer playing hide and seek?

Brandon: That's not my style

Tshepi: I believe you have something that belongs to me

Him: i do indeed

Tshepi: What's your price?

Him: i have something you want and you have something i want

Tshepi: What do you want?

Brandon: Nissi

Tshepi giggled a bit

Him: Now you being ridiculous

Brandon: Then the police would be interested in what I'll have to show them

Tshepi: First of all there's nothing that links me to the death of Charmaine you just fishing for the impossible

Brandon: Maybe i am.

After saying that he hung up. I was scared i thought maybe Tshepiso was gonna strangle me.

Tshepiso: Get ready at 17:00 we having dinner with The parents.

I really wondered what Brandon was up too i tried calling him the whole day mara still voicemail.

I prepared myself for the dinner and we made our way to the house. We got there and everything was prepared

We sat down to eat Dora was around.

Sheeda: I'm glad you two were able to make it, we hardly see you this nowadays.

Vic looked at me.

Vic: How are you Nissi?

Me: im good

Vic: Any problems?

Me: No, we fine.

We ate dinner like one big happy family it was so nice until a door bell disturbed us.

Dora went to open, then came into the lounge with Brandon and two cops. I feared what was gonna happen next.

Vic: What's going on here?

Police1: We looking for Mr Tshepiso Thobekgale

Tshepi: That's me.

The cop went to him and stood him up and handcuffed him.

Police1: Mr Thobekgale you are under arrest for the murder of Miss Charmaine Jones.

You have the right to remain silent anything you say can and will be used against you in the court of law. You have the right to an attorney, if you cannot afford one, one will be appointed to you.

Dora put her hands on her head

Dora: Ohhh Thixo onofefe (God of mercy)

Sheeda: Murder? My son would never murder anyone

Vic: I think there's a terrible mistake here Officer

Tshepi: It's okay yall, I'll be back it's just a misunderstanding.

They took him away and he stopped close to brandon.

Tshepi: Well played

Brandon: I told you that you are not God.

They led him out of the house in handcuffs leaving us all in shock.

PART 55 BROKEN SOUL

We were all still shocked about what just happened.

Sheeda: did you hear that Vic? They talking about my son killed someone. My son can never do anything like that.

Sheeda was mostly affected by this. Dora went to comfort her.

Dora: Everything will be alright Madam they have just made a mistake.

Vic: Ill sort it out.

Brandon looked at me.

Brandon: Nissi i think it's time they know the truth.

Sheeda: What truth?

Brandon was right, Sheeda and Vic must know what kind of a person their son is.

Vic: Nissi if you know something tell us.

Me: It is true.

Sheeda: What is true?

Me: Tshepiso did kill his ex gf charmaine.

Sheeda put her hand over her mouth,while Dora clapped her hands in disbelief.

Dora: Andiyikholelwa ke le (i cannot believe this)

Me: And Charmaine is not the only person he has killed

They looked at me.

Me: He also killed my ex bf right in my presence.

Sheeda: i cannot hear anymore of this, can i be excused?

Me: No you can't. Sheeda your son needs help! All this time that i have been living with him i have been beaten almost like every week, i had a Broken nose, broken ribs, a few weeks ago i have been hospitalised because of him! I have been abused terribly!

Sheeda: That is not true, my son can never do that!

Me: Your son is not who you think he is!

Sheeda: after all that I've done for you! We took you in and this is how you repay us?

Me: Why would i lie on him?

Sheeda: Vic let's go get my son he won't survive in jail!

Vic looked at me.

Vic: i need to know that what Nissi just told us is true or not before i can go and bail him out.

Sheeda: You telling me that you believe her? She probably planned this with her bf *referring to brandon* it was their whole plan to set my son up!

Brandon: we didn't..

Sheeda: Get out of my house!

She then looked at me

Her: And you too! I never wanna see you ever again.

I looked at Vic i thought he was gonna say something but he didn't.

Me: It's fine If you don't believe me, but one day the truth will show itself because it always Does.

I walked out with Brandon. When i got outside i cried my heart was broken how can sheeda think that of me.

Brandon came to hug me.

Brandon: It's okay they will find out sooner or later.

We went to his car and he drove me to the house and parked outside the gate.

Me: i don't wanna live here anymore. This people have ruined my life, i was doing fine before i met them.

Him: Where are you going to go?

Me: I don't know maybe home

Brandon: You gonna give up all that you have worked hard for just because they disowned you?

Me: What choice do i have? How can i survive without them? Vic has already paid for my tuition fees now but what about next year? How will i afford varsity.

Him: You'll get a bursary I'll help you study hard. The college offers bursaries to students with merits if you work hard you can get one.

Me: i don't know Brandon

He held my hand.

Him: Just trust me on this one, and you can come move in with me in the meantime.

Well i have nowhere to go, so i said yes. We went to the house and i packed my clothes then we drove to his house.....

His house was a small house not fancy and all that. He took my bags and we walked in. We got into the kitchen and some old woman was cooking she didn't look that old but she was old.

Brandon: Good evening Grandma

She stopped what she was doing and looked at him with a warm smile.

Her: I'm glad you are back, i made your favourite.

Him: It sure smells nice.

She looked at me.

Brandon: Grandma this is Nissi and she will be living with us for some time.

Her: Wow Nissi, that is a lovely name.

She came to hug me.

Her: You are welcome

Me: Thank you.

Brandon: Let me go and show you were you gonna sleep.

The house only had 2bedrooms.

Him: You'll be sleeping here in my room.

The room was just simple.

Him: It's nothing fancy but at least you'll be safe and warm.

I sat on the bed.

Me: Thank you.

Him: You'll find me in the kitchen.

He went out. I sat there all crying i was very heartbroken how can sheeda do this to me.

After a while i went to the kitchen and overhead Brandon talking to his grandmother.

Her: She seems like a very nice girl

Brandon: She is.

Her: Are you two dating?

Him: No we are just friends.

I walked in on them.

Her: Sit down i will dish up for you.

I sat down and she dished up for us and we ate. Was apple pie with milk.....

.....

Life at Brandon's was not too fancy but it was comfortable. I liked his grandmother she liked me too. I spent more time with her we did alot of things. My exams were approaching so Brandon was very strict on me studying. I studied most of the time,with him helping me. I haven't heard anything about Tshepiso nor have i kept any contact with his parents. One day when Brandon's grandmother and i were baking my phone rang and it was Sheeda I ignored.

Grandma: Who was that?

Me: Just skeletons of my past that i don't wanna talk too.

Her: You need to deal with whatever pain you are carrying

Me: i am very happy here and i don't wanna ruin that.

She smiled at me. Sheeda and Vic kept on calling me for days none stop that it was now irritating and i answered.

Me: What do you want?

Sheeda: Hey bamboo I've been calling but you weren't answering

Me: I know

Her: Can we meet up and talk?

Me: Why? So that you can try to make me feel guilty?

Her: I know that you probably hate me right now but there's a lot we need to discuss.

Me: Fine where do you wanna meet?

Her: our old favourite place Mugg&Bean.

I really didn't know what she wanted.....

When Brandon was back from his interview he was looking for another job since he resigned from the college.

Me: How was it?

Him: wasn't that bad I'm just hoping that i got it

Me: You will get it.

He went and poured something to drink

Me: Can you drive me somewhere? I have to meet up with someone

Him: No problem.

He drove me to town and said i should call him when I'm done. I went to meet up with Sheeda at Mugg&Bean she was already there she stood up and came to hug me but i acted very cold towards her so she backed away.

We sat down.

Her: It's good to see you

Me: Wish i can say the same

Her: How have you been and where are you staying?

Me: I'm sure we not here to discuss my life.

Her: You right about that. I wanted to apologise for what happened that night i shouldn't have said those things to you and as my daughter i shouldve trusted you and believed you.

Me: Thank you i guess

Her: You were right about Tshepiso,he confessed to killing charmaine.

Me: That's good for him.

Her: He was supposed to get life in prison but because of his confession and pleading guilty the judge was lenient on him. They gave him 30Years and he is eligible for parole, he might not even serve that 30Years.

Me: You must be happy.

Her: Not quite. I still have to live with the fact that my son is a murderer.

Me: I still don't understand why I'm here

Her: i want you to come home

Me: You must be kidding me

Her: We your family Nissi

Me: A family that kicked me out! And if i come back, how do i know you won't kick me out again?

Her: i promise you i won't. We miss you Nissi and Vic is the one whose Greatly affected by your departure.

Me: im sorry if that's how you guys feel, but I'm happy were i am.

I said that, stood up and walked out. I wasn't gonna allow myself to go back there again.

Brandon came to fetch me and we went home.

Him: And who were you meeting up with?

Me: Sheeda. She wants me to come back home

Brandon: And what do you say?

Me: i don't wanna go back there again.

The next coming days were hard on me i missed my family alot that even Brandon started to notice.

Him: Why don't you just go home?

Me: i don't want too

Him: It's clear that you miss them

Me: I don't miss them

Him: Yes you do, and I'm sure they miss you too. Family is family Nissi no matter what they do. Give them another chance

Me: And if they kick me out again?

Him: You can always come back here.

Brandon was right i have to go back.....

The following day i packed my things and i was ready to go home. Brandon's grandma hugged me she was so sad to see me leave but i promised to visit again.

Brandon drove me to sheeda and Vic's house. We stopped at the gate

Him: should i come in with you?

Me: i think I'll be fine.

Him: Okay

I hugged him

Me: Thank you for everything

Him: That's what friends are for.

I smiled at him and got my bags then walked into the house. Did i make the right choice?

I don't know. I opened the door and went in Dora was at the kitchen, she was happy and surprised to see me.

Dora: Madam come and see this!

Sheeda came into the kitchen after a few minutes

Sheeda: Dora what are you screa...

She was surprised to see me too.

Her: Nissi are you back?

I nodded my head yes

Her: back for good?

Me: if you don't kick me out again Yes.

She put her hands on her cheeks, with tears in her eyes she came to hug me. I also had tears in my eyes now... We were both crying in each other's arms.

****5 years later****

I was a broken soul indeed. It's not that life was unfair to Me i just always made poor choices that affected my life, but God remained faithful because although i experienced alot of darkness in my life, but at the end There was a light at the end of the tunnel. I wish i can say Tshepiso made it out of jail and we got married then lived happily ever after but life had other plans for me. Our relationship was built on the wrong reasons, it was a deadly obsession and it was never gonna work.

Jess went to UCT to study Pharmacy there we keep in touch everyday, she has pursued a serious relationship with a xhosa guy. Floozy was supposed to study medicine but he went to follow his dream to study dancing at London, and Me? Well I went to study Pharmacy at Wits and the love that Vic and Sheeda showed me was amazing, not only did i do that but me and Brandon got engaged along the way, Yes we ended up starting a love relationship i was soo happy to have him in my life he was loving and Caring just everything i needed from a man. Zuko is set to come and live in jhb i want her to work for me, Yes Vic was gonna make me the CEO in his company. The college reinstated Brandon he went back to being a lecturer Vic and Sheeda bought us a beautiful town house as our engagement present. After Vee found out that Tshepiso is in jail, he made a run for it never to be seen or heard from again. Today was my graduation and i was happy i wish my mom and Fanny were here to see me. Vic, Sheeda, and Brandon's Grandma were already sitting at the front. I was still outside with Brandon. He put my hood over me.

Him: Congratulations, you made it.

Me: It still hasn't sunk in

Him: It will sink In when you holding that degree

I smiled

Him: Go on then we will be sitting there and supporting you.

Me: Thank you

Him: for what?

Me: For saving me from T-Pee and showed me what True love is along the way

He smiled and kissed me. I went to the other graduates while he went inside. After a few minutes we were escorted inside and took our seats, and i saw my family sitting there looking all proud. Speeches were made and all that then it was time to go and collect our qualifications. They started with other courses then ended with us. When they called my name i stood up with a smile but that smile was short lived when i saw Someone entering through the door it was Tshepiso. He was wearing the fresh boyz outfit and topped it off with a hat as always. he sat at the back. Was it really him or were my eyes deceiving me? The speaker called my name again and i went up there with my stomach tied in knots, my knees were weak i felt dizzy like fainting. I went to get my degree then sat down. After a few minutes the ceremony was finished people went out and i couldn't see him anymore. Brandon came to me.

Brandon: Are you alright?

Me: Brandon i saw him

Him: Saw who?

Me: T-Pee his here

Him: Can't be Nissi. T-Pee is in jail.

Me: His here I'm telling you.

One of my friends came to me.

Her: Hey Niss can we go take a pic together outside?

Me: Ya Ofcause

Brandon: We'll wait for you by the car.

Me: Okay.

We went outside to take the picture. I was so not easy.

Her: Friend are you okay you look so tense

I flashed a smile

Me: I'm okay

After the pic we started walking away. Some boy stopped me

Him: Sorry are you Nissi?

Me: Yes why?

Him: Someone said i should give you this.

It was an Envelope. I opened it and there was a card inside, i read the card and it read "Congratu-Fucken-lations Nini"

I looked at the boy.

Me: Who gave you this?

He pointed at the parking and my heart almost stopped it was Tshepiso he was going inside his Mustang and after a few minutes he drove off i dropped the card and i slowly went down on the ground. My friend held me all screaming "Nissi". T-Pee was back.

I am so thankful that I didn't faint, because If i did i was gonna draw alot of attention to myself, and I'm glad that innocentia was there to hold me and prevent me from falling. Innocentia was a close friend of mine that i got at wits we were studying the same course.

Her: Friend are you okay?

Me: Yes im okay, sorry i just had a flashback from the past.

Brandon was coming our way now.

Brandon: What's taking so long?

Inno: She's not feeling well she almost fainted.

Brandon came to me

Him: Are you okay doll? What happened?

Me: i..

Inno: She received a card from a..

I had to stop her from talking

Me: It's nothing babe really Inno is just overreacting

Brandon: Are you sure? Because you have been acting very weird today Skat

I flashed a fake smile

Me: im fine babe, we can go now

I hugged Inno

Inno: Call me when you get home

Me: I will.

Brandon and i walked to the car while holding hands, he noticed the card in my other hand

Brandon: What's that?

Me: just a congratulations card from a classmate

Him: Okay

We went to our car and went to join sheeda, Vic, and Brandon's grandma at home, Dora had prepared lunch for everyone. In the car i was in deep thoughts, that can't be Tshepiso i mean he got 30Years how can he be out in 5 years? That doesn't make sense, and what does he want? Is he here for revenge?

Brandon didn't bother starting a conversation with me he saw that i was distracted.....

We got home and i left my graduation gown and everything else In the car. We walked into the house and Dora started ululating, then after came to hug me.

Her: i am so proud of you ntombazana. Im sure it wasn't an easy Road but you made it. I was smiling.

Sheeda: She truly made us proud.

Vic: i agree.

For the first time there's one thing that i did right in my life.

We went to the dinning room and sat at the table and started dishing up Ofcause after sheeda had blessed the food. They were all talking and smiling i couldn't contribute to the conversation i was scared, what if Tshepiso kills me and Brandon? But was it him that i saw? I mean the card can't lie it sure was him.

After eating we just sat and started talking while Dora cleared the table and Brandon's grandma helped her.

I went to sit down on the couch while Brandon and Vic went up to Vic's study busy talking about cigars. Sheeda came to sit next to me.

Sheeda: What's wrong Bamboo, you seem disturbed, you haven't been yourself today

Me: im fine sheeda

Her: don't lie to me, i thought we were over this thing of keeping things from each other I might as well tell her because she won't stop nagging me.

Me: Tshepi is back

Her jaw dropped, leaving her eyes wide open.

Her: whaaaaaaaat!

Me: He came to my graduation sat at the back and gave me a card.

Sheeda: it can't be, i mean he got 30years

Me: It was him sheeda

She put her hand on my forehead.

Her: could be that you hallucinating i mean you been having a serious fever this past few..

Me: Sheeda i know what i saw! *shouting*

She got her hand off me

Me: I'm sorry i didn't mean to shout it's just that, I'm tired. Maybe you right i probably have been hallucinating.

She held my hand.

Her: How about tomorrow we go and see my therapist I'm not saying you crazy but you look stressed and need someone to talk too.

Me: Okay we will go

Her: Loosen up bamboo today it's your big day you should be happy and not sulking

I smiled.

Her: Your life is going well, you just graduated you are engaged to a handsome boy who loves you dearly.

I looked at my ring and smiled.

Me: i sure am lucky.

We chilled at Sheeda's house until late then we decided to leave. We first drove Brandon's grandma to her house then after drove to our house. We got there and Brandon held my graduation gown and hat while i held my degree. We got inside the house and the card fell from my gown. He picked it up and i snatched it from him before he opened it. I started tearing it up and put it in a trash can.

He looked at me

Me: What?

Him: I'm not even gonna ask.

We went to our bedroom and he put the gown nicely in the closet.

I took off my heels then he came and hugged me from behind busy kissing my neck.

Me: Brandon not tonight

Him: Come on doll, just one quick round.

I got his hands off me.

Me: im going to shower.

I took off my clothes and went to shower. I swear thinking about Tshepi got my heart pumping abnormally. I realised that I had been in the shower for too long when I went back to the main room and found Brandon sleeping. I lotioned and put on my pj short and a matching pj t-shirt, then went to the kitchen to eat something since i didn't eat at Sheeda's. I took out a pie from the fridge and put it on a plate then when i went to throw the box in the trash because it was the last pie, the trash can was full and it was starting to smell. I took out the plastic fasten it and went out to put it outside the gate. I stood there for a while starrng at the stars and it was dark with no one passing, it was very quiet. I noticed a black car parked close to our house but looked like there was no one inside, Aii it could be anyone lemme go inside because i don't feel safe now. When i turned i came face to face with the devil himself

Tshepi: Hello Nini, remember me?

I seriously thought I was gonna have a heart attack

Me: How.. Why.. Wa..

He put two fingers on my lips.

Him: Shhh, We'll get to the details later, but now I want us to go for a ride.

I wasn't going nowhere with this psycho

I shook my head no

He gave me a deadly stare, the one that made my skin crawl.

Him: We can do this the easy way or the hard way.

I started walking away but he grabbed me from my waist, i started screaming but he put his hand over my mouth, and whispered in my ear.

Him: Shut the fuck up! Or i will kill you right here, and right now you hear me?

I nodded my head yes..

He kissed me on my cheek

Him: shit! You still beautiful just like the first time i laid my eyes on you, and you smell good too.

I was now crying and praying that someone comes through for me,i don't wanna die now not just when i graduated.

Tshepiso did take me that night and he took me to our old house. Alot happened there, he tortured me by having sexual intercourse with me against my will, he was trying to get me back in sickening ways and ended up impregnating me but since my womb was not eligible enough to hold a baby i miscarried. He let me go after a while and my family was dead worried, i don't wanna mention Brandon who looked like he was gonna die without seeing me. I wasn't gonna run away from Tshepiso anymore running won't help so for me to be happy and live a peaceful life i beat him at his own game, i hired a hitman to kill him and they did a perfect job, made it look like it was a simple hijacking that went wrong. Yes we buried him and you know what's sad? No one will ever know who killed him. Brandon and i ended up getting married and i became honest to him about everything,he was angry at first to know that i have a sex tape and had an abortion but he ended up forgiving me. I didn't tell him about being a prostitute some other secrets are better left untold. Today we very happy and my life is at peace although sheeda is still greatly affected by her son's death but Vic cares less because Tshepiso had caused him great pain. Brandon and i we set to adopt soon, and me? I have never been this happy.

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.
